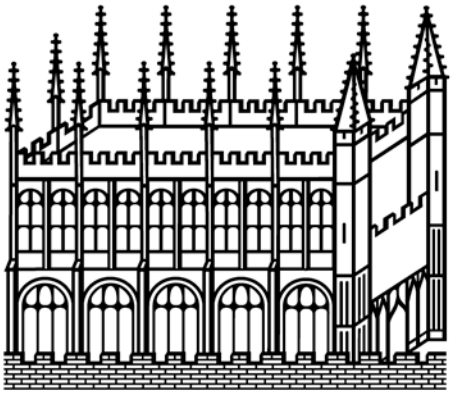


Bodleian Libraries

UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

This book is part of the collection held by the Bodleian Libraries and scanned by Google, Inc. for the Google Books Library Project.

For more information see:

http://www.bodleian.ox.ac.uk/dbooks



This work is licensed under a Creative Commons Attribution-NonCommercial-ShareAlike 2.0 UK: England & Wales (CC BY-NC-SA 2.0) licence.

OXFORD
UNIVERSITY
SCHOOL OF
ENGLISH

Study.
Book Case B. shelf. D



[redacted]

D. Walker 1763
XL 747 [la]







Lud. Du Guernier inv. et Sculp.

vol: 2.

THE

LADIES

LIBRARY.

VOLUME *the* SECOND.

WRITTEN by a LADY.

Publiſhed by

Sir *RICHARD STEELE.*

The SIXTH EDITION.

LONDON:

Printed for J. and R. TONSON and
S. DRAPER in the *Strand.*

MDCCLI.

TO

Mrs. *BOVEY*.

MADAM,

IT is an undiſputed Privilege Writers are poſſeſſed of, to produce Examples to the Precept they would enforce from the living Characters of their Cotempora-

ries, You cannot therefore expect for ever to be doing laudable Things, and for ever to escape Applauſe. It is in vain, you find, that you have always concealed greater Excellencies, than others induſtriouſly preſent to View; for the World will know that your Beauty, though in the higheſt Degree of Dignity and Sweetneſs, is but a faint Image of the Spirit which inhabits the amiable Form which Heaven has beſtowed on you. It is obſerved by all who know you, that though you have an Aſpect and Mien, which draw the Attention and Expectation of

all

all who Converſe with You, and a Wit and good Senſe which ſurmount the great Conceptions Your Perſon raiſes in Your Beholders, thoſe Perfections are enjoyed by you, like Gifts of common Acceptation; that lovely and affable Air expreſſes only the Humility of a great and generous Heart; and the moſt ſhining Accompliſhments, uſed by others to attract vulgar Admiration, are Serviceable to You only, as they adorn Piety and Charity.

Though Your Perſon and Fortune equally raiſe the Admiration and Ambition of our whole Sex,

to

to move Your Attention to their Importunities, your equal Spirit entertains itſelf with Ideas of a very different Kind, and is ſolicitous to ſearch for Imperfections, where it were the utmoſt Injuſtice for any other to imagine any, and Applauſes only awaken You to an Inquiſition for Errors.

It is with this Turn of Mind, that, inſtead of Aſſemblies and Converſations, Books and Solitude have been your Choice, and You have gone on in the Study of what You ſhould be, rather than attended to the Celebration of what you are. Thus, with the Charms of the Faireſt of Your

own

own Sex, and Knowledge not inferior to the more Learned of Ours, a Cloſet, a Bower, or ſome beauteous Scene of rural Nature, has conſtantly robbed the World of a Lady's Appearance, who never was beheld but with Gladneſs to her Viſitants, nor ever admired but with Pain to Herſelf.

But a conſtant Diſtribution of large Charities, a Search for Objects of new Bounty, and a skilful Choice of modeſt Merit, or ſuffering Virtue, touch the Souls of thoſe who Partake Your Goodneſs too deeply to be born without inquiring for, and celebrating their Benefactreſs: I ſhould be loth

loth to offend your Tenderneſs in this Particular, but I know, when I ſay this, the Fatherleſs and the Widow, the neglected Man of Merit, the Wretch on the ſick Bed, in a word, the Diſtreſſed under all Forms, will from this Hint learn to Trace the kind Hand which has ſo often, as from Heaven, conveyed to them what they have asked in the Anguiſh of Soul, when none could hear, but He who has bleſſed you with ſo ample a Fortune, and given you a Soul to employ it in His Service.

If much more than what is here intimated be not the plain

Truth,

DEDICATION.

Truth, it is impoſſible to come at what is ſo, ſince one can find none who ſpeak of you, who are not in Love with your Perſon, or indebted to your Fortune. I wiſh you, as the Completion of Human Happineſs, a long Continuance in being what you are; and am,

MADAM,

Your moſt Obedient, and

moſt humble Servant,

RICHARD STEELE.

THE

CONTENTS.

VOL. II.

The Daughter,	Page 1
The Wife,	37
The Mother,	84
The Widow,	217
The Miſtreſs,	235

THE

THE LADIES Library.

The DAUGHTER.

HAVING in the Firſt Volume treated of the ſeveral Vices that are apt to corrupt Life in general, but always with a particular View to the ſofter Sex, I ſhall now addreſs myſelf to them in the ſeveral Relations of *Daughter*, *Wife*, *Mother*, *Widow*, and *Miſtreſs*; and inquire a little into the Extent and Exerciſe of their relative *Duties*, as ſuch: Beginning with that of Children to their Parents.

To our Parents we in the firſt Place owe *Reverence and Reſpect*. We muſt behave ourſelves towards them with all *Humility* and *Obſervance*; and muſt not, upon any Pretence of *Infirmity* in them, deſpiſe or contemn them; either in outward behaviour, or ſo much as inwardly in our Hearts. If indeed they have *Infirmities*, it muſt be our Buſineſs to cover and conceal them, as *Shem* and *Japhet*, who cover'd their Father's *Nakedneſs*, while the accurſt *Cham* diſcloſed it. This muſt be done in ſuch a manner as even themſelves might not behold it. We are, as much as may be, to keep ourſelves from looking on thoſe *Nakedneſſes* of our *Parents*, which

may tempt us to think Irreverently of them. This is very contrary to the Practice of too many Children, who do not only publiſh and deride the *Infirmities* of their *Parents*, but pretend they have thoſe *Infirmities* which they have not. There is commonly ſuch a Pride and Headineſs in Youth, that they cannot bear Submiſſion to the Counſels and Directions of their Elders, and therefore to ſhake them off, are willing to have them paſs for the Effects of *Dotage*, when they are indeed the Fruits of Sobriety and Experience. *Hearken to thy Father that begat thee*, ſays the wiſe Man, *and deſpiſe not thy Mother when ſhe is old.* But the Youth of our Age ſet up for Wiſdom the quite contrary way, and think that by deſpiſing and ridiculing their Parents, they ſhall acquire the Reputation of *Wits*. If ſuch will not practiſe *Solomon*'s Exhortations, let them remember his Threats. *The Eye that mocketh his Father, and deſpiſeth to obey his Mother, the Ravens of the Valley ſhall pluck it out, and the young Eagles ſhall eat it.*

Love is another *Duty* which we owe our *Parents:* We are to be heartily deſirous of all manner of *Good* to them, and to abhor to do any thing that may grieve or diſquiet them. This will appear by common *Gratitude*, when 'tis remember'd what our Parents have done for Us, how they were not only the Inſtruments of bringing us into the World, but alſo of Suſtaining and Supporting us after. Certainly they that rightly weigh the Cares and Fears that go to the bringing up of a Child, will judge the Love of that Child to be but a tolerable Return for them. This Love is to be expreſt in all kindneſs of Behaviour. We muſt gladly and readily do thoſe things which may bring Joy and Comfort to them. And ſince the Debt a Child owes a *Parent* is ſo great, that he can never hope himſelf to diſcharge it, he is therefore to call on God by Prayer, and to beg of him that he will reward all the Good his Parents have done for him, by multiplying his Bleſſings upon them. What ſhall we then ſay to thoſe Children, who inſtead of calling on Heaven for

Bleſſings

Bleſſings on their Parents, ranſack Hell for Curſes on them, and pour out the blackeſt Execrations againſt them? This is ſo horrid a thing, that one would think there needed no Perſuaſive againſt it; becauſe none could be ſo vile as to fall into it. But we ſee God himſelf, who beſt knows Mens Hearts, ſaw it poſſible, and therefore laid the heavieſt Puniſhment upon it. *He that curſeth his Father or Mother, let him die the Death.* And alas! our daily Experience tells us, that this curſing of *Parents* is not only poſſible, but common. How many Children are there, that either thro' Impatience of the Government, or *Greedineſs* of the *Poſſeſſions* of their Parents, have wiſh'd their *Deaths?* Let thoſe that do it remember, how fairly and plauſibly they carry it before Men, there is one who ſees thoſe ſecret Wiſhes of their Hearts, and in his Sight they aſſuredly paſs for thoſe hainous Offenders, Curſers of their Parents, whoſe Puniſhment it is to *die the Death.* Let them conſider, that God hath as well the Power of Puniſhing as of Seeing, and therefore ſince he has pronounced *Death* to be the Reward of that *Sin*, 'tis not unreaſonable to expect he may himſelf inflict it: That they who watch for the *Death* of their *Parents*, may untimely meet their own. Whereas to thoſe that *Honour* their *Father* and their *Mother*, is promis'd the Bleſſing of *Long Life.*

Another Duty we owe to Parents is *Obedience.* This is not only injoin'd us by the Fifth *Commandment*, but expreſly in other Places of the *Scripture. Children, obey your Parents in the Lord.* We owe them *Obedience* in all things, unleſs where their Commands are contrary to the Commands of God, in which Caſe our Duty to God muſt be preferr'd. If any *Parent* ſhall be ſo wicked as to require his Child to *Steal*, or *Lye*, or to do any unlawful thing the *Child* then offends not againſt his Duty, if he diſobeys that Command. On the contrary, he muſt diſobey, or elſe he offends againſt a higher Duty, that which he owes to God his Heavenly Father. However when 'tis thus neceſſary to refuſe *Obedience*, it ſhould be done in

ſuch a modeſt reſpectful manner, that it may appear 'tis Conſcience only, and not Stubbornneſs, which moves him to it. But when the Commands are lawful, that is, when the thing commanded is either *Good* or not *Evil*, there, the *Child* is bound to obey, be the Command, in a Weightier or Lighter matter. How little this Duty is regarded, is too manifeſt every where in the World, where Parents generally have their Children no longer under Command, than they are under the *Rod*. When they are once grown up, they think themſelves free from all manner of *Obedience* to them, or if ſome continue to pay it, yet let the Motive of it be examin'd, and it will in too many be found to be worldly *Prudence*. They fear to diſpleaſe their Parents, not for fear of diſpleaſing God, but leſt they ſhould ſhorten their Hand towards them, and they ſhould loſe ſomewhat by it. How few are there that *Obey* purely becauſe Obedience is a *Duty?* How few that are as much afraid of the Curſe of *Diſobedience*, as of the Misfortune of *Diſinheritance*.

Children never more highly diſobey their *Parents* than in marrying againſt their Conſent. They are ſo much the *Goods*, the Poſſeſſions of their *Fathers* and *Mothers*, that they cannot without a kind of *Theft*, give away themſelves. They muſt have the Allowance of thoſe that have the Right in them, and therefore we ſee under the *Moſaical* Law, the *Maid* that had made any *Vow*, was not ſuffer'd to perform it, unleſs ſhe had the *Parents* Conſent, whoſe Right was thought of force enough to cancel and make void the Obligation even of a *Vow*; which ought to be ſo much conſider'd by us, as to keep us from making any ſuch, by which that Right is infring'd.

Another Duty to *Parents* is to aſſiſt them in all their Wants, of what kind ſoever, whether Weakneſs and Sickneſs of Body, Decay of Underſtanding, or *Poverty* and *Lowneſs* in Eſtate: In all theſe the Child is bound according to his Ability, to relieve and aſſiſt them. For the two former, Weakneſs of Body and Infirmity of Mind, none can doubt of the Duty, when they remember

ber how every *Child* did in his Infancy receive the very ſame Benefit from their *Parents*. The Child had then no Strength to ſupport, no underſtanding to guide itſelf, the Care of the *Parents* was fain to ſupply both theſe to it; and therefore, in common *Gratitude*, whenever either of theſe becomes the Parents Caſe, as ſometimes by great Age or ſome Accident both do, the *Child* is to perform the ſame Offices back again to them. As to that of relieving their *Poverty*, there is the very ſame Obligation to that with the former: It being but an Act of Juſtice to ſuſtain your *Parents*, as your *Parents* ſuſtain'd you. Beſides, *Chriſt* teaches us that this is contain'd within the Precept of *Honouring our Parents*; for when he accuſes the Phariſees of rejecting the *Commandment* of God, to cleave to their own Tradition, he inſtances in this Particular concerning the *relieving* of *Parents*, where 'tis manifeſt, that this is a Part of the Duty injoin'd by the Fifth *Commandment*: As may be ſeen at large in the *Seventh* Chapter of St. *Mark*.

How then ſhall thoſe anſwer it, who deny Relief to their poor Parents? who cannot part with their own Exceſſes and Superfluities, which are indeed their own Sins, to ſatisfy the Neceſſities of thoſe to whom they owe their Being? Some are ſo very wicked, that out of *Pride*, they ſcorn to own their *Parents* in their *Poverty*. Themſelves being advanced to Dignity and Wealth, they often think it a Diſparagement to them to look on their Parents in their low Condition, it being, as they think, the betraying to the World the Meanneſs of their *Birth*; and thus the poor Parent fares the worſe for the *Proſperity* of the *Child*. This is ſuch a Pride and Unnaturalneſs together, as will ſurely find a ſharp Vengeance from God, it being a *double Sin*, and *double*, without Repentance, will be the *Puniſhment*.

No Unkindneſs, no Fault of the *Parents*, can acquit the *Child* of this Duty; tho' the Gratitude due to a kind *Parent* be a very forcible Motive to make the *Child* pay it, yet that is not the only nor chiefeſt Ground of it,

which is laid in the Command of God, who requires us thus to *Honour our Parents*; and therefore, tho' we ſhould ſuppoſe a *Parent* ſo Unnatural as never to have done any thing to oblige the *Child*, which can hardly be imagin'd, yet ſtill the Command of God continues in force; and if no Tye of *Gratitude* ſhould lie upon us, we are bound ſtill to obey it.

There is all the Reaſon in the World, that while *Children* want Underſtanding to direct their Choice and Will, they ſhould have no other Will but that of their *Parents*, and therefore ſhould obey while they do not underſtand. Even *Children* themſelves ſee this, as ſoon as in the leaſt degree they come to Reaſon: They ſee that if they had been left to themſelves, they had, in many Caſes, come to Miſchief; and that it was therefore fit they ſhould obey their Parents Orders and Commands. People ſomewhat older ſee as much Neceſſity that they ſhould do ſo too, and they themſelves will ſee as much, when they have out-grown their childiſh Fancies; they will ſee, that their Parents Wiſdom, Experience, and Capacity, were much greater than their own, and that they were for that Reaſon fitter to Rule and Guide them. I believe there are few People in the World that have, while young, diſputed and repin'd at the Commands of their *Parents*, who have not afterwards chang'd their Minds, and found they were truly wiſer, better, and more reaſonable to be comply'd with than their own *Wills* and *Humours*, tho' for the preſent they thought otherwiſe. It is more likely that having liv'd longer, ſtood higher, and obſerv'd Things better, they ſhould be moſt in the right, and give the beſt Advice. The *Parents* muſt needs diſcern what is more fit and proper for their *Children*; and tho' they may be now and then miſtaken, yet it is always ſafeſt to follow their Inſtructions and Commands. When Children obey their Parents, if they afterwards happen to miſcarry, yet they have this to comfort them, that they miſcarry'd in their *Duty*, that they took the wiſeſt Counſel, ſuch as all good

good People approve; and every one is more ready to pity and help ſuch under their Misfortunes, than ſuch as fell into the like thro' *Stubbornneſs*, *Self-Conceit*, and *Diſobedience*. As there is all the Preſumption in the World on the Side of the *Parents*, that their Advice and Commands are the wiſeſt and moſt reaſonable, ſo there is alſo all the Certainty of the good Intention and Deſign that can be: Who ſhould intend the Benefit of the *Children* ſo much as the *Parents*, who ſeem to live for no other End than to do them Good? They have no other Aim than their Advantage; all their Care and Study, all their Thoughts are fix'd on them; they ſuffer a thouſand Inconveniences for their Sake, and chooſe to live ſometimes penuriouſly, that their Children may live at *Eaſe* and *Pleaſure*; and who ſhould ſuſpect the Counſels and Commands of ſuch, of want of Love and Kindneſs? There is nothing more proper to perſuade, than an Opinion that they do it out of Love, and deſign our Good by it. Now no one can poſſibly be ſo aſſur'd of the Kindneſs and Good-will, of any one beſides, as of his Parents, and therefore the Command of no one ought to be entertain'd with a better Opinion than that of Parents; this would help to forward our *Obedience* to them, were it well conſider'd. Young People ſhould reflect a little, that theſe Counſels and Commands come from thoſe that have liv'd a great deal longer than they have, that have made Remarks, and had Experience; they have had Parents themſelves, and either follow'd their Advice, or repented of not doing it. The *Duties* injoin'd are perhaps unacceptable to me; they are ſuch as I ſhould not chooſe, ſuch as I do not like; but I have often found myſelf miſtaken, and I have no reaſon to think myſelf wiſer than they who perſuade me otherwiſe than I am inclin'd. I am but of Yeſterday, and know little; I have no Experience; and ſure theſe *Parents* have not liv'd ſo long for nothing. *Old Age* has ſomething in it *Good*. *Wiſdom* and *Knowledge* moſt commonly attend it, and qualify them to be Counſellors.

Further, there is no body ſo likely to wiſh me as well as they: There is no body has done ſo much for me, no body grieves at my Miſcarriages like them, or ſtudies with that Concern and Care to prevent them: Other People, as it comes in their way, give me good Counſel, and ſay the ſame Things in effect that *Parents* do: They warn me of the ſame Dangers, and exhort me to the ſame *Duties:* but I can plainly perceive there is a great deal of difference between the Mind and Concern with which *Parents* ſpeak, and thoſe of other People, though good Friends: They ſpeak with a lively Senſe and Feeling, with Force and Affection, in great Earneſt, and from the bottom of the Heart, as if they were to endure the *Evils* they warn us to avoid, and ſhare with us the Miſeries we ſhall undergo, if we follow not their Counſels. They ſeem to be exceedingly *intereſted* in our Behalf, and yet 'tis evident they can make no manner of Advantage of our complying with them: They can get nothing by us but Content and Satisfaction. All they have already is ours in Deſign, and all they are getting ſtill, and deſire to get, is for us; wherefore we can ſuſpect them of no Deſign upon us, and all theſe Things ſhew us moſt evidently, that what they ſay to us, and the Commands they lay upon us, proceed from the trueſt, moſt ſincere and diſintereſted Affection. They are Afflicted when we are Unhappy; let them be never ſo *Wiſe*, or *Rich*, or *Honourable*, our *Folly*, *Sin*, and *Diſobedience* will make them Miſerable; tho' they loſe by it neither Underſtanding, Wealth, nor Places, yet ſuch is their Concern for us, that in all theſe Things they are not Happy, unleſs we will conſent to make them ſo, by being *Dutiful* and *Obedient*, and taking good and virtuous Courſes. On the other Side, let us be never ſo *Wiſe*, or *Rich*, or *Honourable*, all that our *Parents* get by it is *Pleaſure* and *Content*; for which, inſtead of taking ought away, they lift up their Hands and Hearts to God, and bleſs us; and can I think the Counſels and Commands of ſuch People are not the

beſt

beſt they can give me, the moſt kindly intended, and fitted for my Practice and Compliance?

Tho' the Commands of *Parents* do often croſs the *Childrens* Deſires, and hinder them from purſuing their Pleaſures, yet it is not becauſe their *Parents* envy them their *Pleaſures*, or deny them Satisfaction; but becauſe the Proſecution of their Deſires, in the forbidden Inſtances, is criminal, and would be hurtful to them, tho' perhaps they ſee it not. They never command them to do any thing, but the doing of it tends to the *Childrens* Advantage; nor ever forbid any thing but what is hurtful in itſelf and Conſequences; and therefore tho' the *Children* ſee nothing but *Pleaſure* in what they propoſe, yet the *Parent* ſtands higher and ſees there is alſo *Sin* or *Danger* near it, and how it will operate at a diſtance, and what Fruits it will produce. And as they remember their Parents to have hinder'd them, when they were younger, from eating ſeveral Meats, or drinking ſeveral Drinks, and doing ſeveral Things which they then lik'd or deſir'd to have, and griev'd and repin'd at the Refuſal, which yet they are now ſatisfy'd proceeded from no Unkindneſs, but turn'd, as it was intended, to their Benefit: So might they learn to conclude, that the commanding them Things for the preſent uneaſy, and forbidding them Things for the preſent ſweet and deſirable may be full as reaſonable and fit to be comply'd withal; and that when a little Time is over-paſt, and the Seaſon of *Pleaſure* ſomewhat ſpent, they will be equally ſatisfy'd with the Care and Wiſdom of their *Parents*. And this young People would do well to improve; they are capable of conſidering, and they ought to do it. Let them inquire of all their Acquaintance that are grown up, and older than themſelves, and the older ſtill the better, and ſee how many of theſe there are that will tell them, It is better, wiſer and ſafer to follow their own *Humours* than the *Advice* of their *Parents*, and how many upon Experience have ſucceeded in diſobeying their Commands; how many there are that are not griev'd at

their *Diſobedience*, and do not wiſh moſt earneſtly they had comply'd with what was advis'd or requir'd of them. And when they find that all the World agree, that notwithſtanding their preſent Deſires, and the Uneaſineſs of complying with the Commands of *Parents*, yet it is better ſo to do; that they who have obey'd, are very much ſatisfy'd, and they who have not, are griev'd and troubled, and wiſh they had: They will ſee they ought to conclude, that however unacceptable ſome Commands of *Parents*, may for the preſent be, yet it is better to yield to them, than to indulge their own Humours; and that the united Wiſdom and Experience of the whole World is a ſafer bottom to proceed upon, than any preſent Longing.

For theſe Reaſons *Children*, ſhould themſelves, when in time they come to be *Parents*, exact, require, and find Obedience at their *Childrens* Hands; this every one expects; this all are naturally led to. Where is the Parent that does not think it reaſonable his Children ſhou'd obey him, even againſt their Inclinations, and ſhou'd not prefer his Wiſdom and Experience to their own Will or Underſtanding, and truſt to his Affection, Love and Favour, rather than purſue their own Humours? Upon the ſame Grounds that any one expects *Obedience* from his *Children*, he knows he ought to pay it his Parents. Now Children and young People obſerving, as they eaſily may, that *Parents* univerſally exact *Obedience* at their Childrens Hands, may very well conclude that they ſhall do ſo too, whenever they come to be *Parents*; and that there muſt certainly be good Reaſon in a Practice, which all the different Nations in the World agree and centre in. If they can imagine that all the World cou'd not agree in any thing, that was not reaſonable and juſt, and yet agree in requiring *Children* to obey their *Parents*, they will quickly ſee that it is juſt and reaſonable for *Children* to obey their *Parents*; for the *Parents* cou'd not reaſonably require it, if it were not reaſonable the *Children* ſhou'd give it.

To ſhew how fit it is to comply with and obey our *Parents*, God calls himſelf, throughout the Holy Scriptures, our *Father*, and from that Title and Relation calls for our *Obedience*; and therefore ſtubborn, headſtrong, diſobedient, and rebellious *Children* ought to think upon theſe things; to conſider all the Ties and Obligations they have to be *Obedient* to their *Parents*; the Reaſonableneſs, the Pleaſure, the Security of being ſo, the Approbation of all good People, and the Bleſſing of God that goes along with it; and on the other hand, the Grief and Trouble of Mind, the Sorrow and Repentance at home, the Shame and Infamy from abroad, and the Diſpleaſure of Almighty God, that attend and follow *Diſobedience* to *Parents*.

But becauſe there are a great many Caſes, in which the Children plead *Exemption* from this *Rule*, in which they do not actually obey their Parents Commands, and yet defend themſelves as no Trangreſſors of this Law: it may be of ſome uſe to ſee in what Particulars they are oblig'd to obey without Reſerve, and in what they are at Liberty; that the *Duty* of *Children*, and the juſt *Authority* of *Parents*, may be both of them ſecur'd.

It has been obſerv'd, that in the great Affair of *Marriage*, a ſtrict Obedience to the Will of *Parents* is requir'd. Indeed it is not expreſly ſaid in *Scripture*, that *Children* ſhould not marry without the Conſent, or againſt the Will of their *Parents*, but it is expreſly ſaid, that they ſhall *honour and obey them*; and it will be hard to reconcile Marrying againſt Conſent, with *honouring* the *Parents*, or Marrying againſt Command, with *Obeying* them; and generally ſpeaking, the Inſtances and Examples of *Marriages* in *Scripture*, are ſuch as ſhew the Parents had the Chiefeſt hand in making them up. The Stile was ever thus, *That ſuch a One gave his Son or Daughter to ſuch a One* in Marriage: wherefore the *Law* being given particularly to the *Jews*, and this being the general Practice amongſt them, it is not unreaſonable to think they held themſelves bound by this Law, not to Marry againſt their

Parents

Parents Will or Conſent. But whether oblig'd by this Law, or no, the Cuſtom was ſuch that it was ſeldom otherwiſe, and that not only among the *Jews*, but even among the *Greeks* and *Romans*, two of the wiſeſt and moſt civiliz'd People of the World. There wou'd be no end of *Citations* to this purpoſe, out of their Books; they are all full of them: and tho' there muſt be many Examples to the contrary, yet there are no *Rules* or *Precepts* in favour of the *Childrens* Liberty; but when they take it, 'tis ſtill with Blame. This Diſpoſal of *Children* by *Parents*, is not only a Matter reaſonable, fair, and approv'd by wiſe and good Men among them, and ſtrengthen'd by Cuſtom uncontroll'd and immemorial, but it paſt into *Laws* and *Statutes*. They reckon'd there was no Marriage without the Conſent of the *Parents*, and the *Children* were all accounted *Baſtards*. *Chriſtianity* for a great while made no *Alterations* in the Matter: The Civil Laws of Chriſtian *Emperors* confirm'd the Opinion of the *Ancients*, and the Sentence of the *Church* went along with them: The *Canons*, and the Judgment of the beſt Writers, are all on this Side; they ſtill make the Conſent of *Parents* eſſential to the *Contract*. The *Laws* of our own Nation take no notice of Conſent of Parents: They truſt it, I believe, to the Reaſon of the Thing itſelf, and to the *Wiſdom* of all Ages, and to the Cuſtom and Example of almoſt all Nations: But the *Canons* of our *Church* dare not venture that; they poſitively require Conſent of *Parents*; they tell us that it is not lawful for any *Children*, unleſs arriv'd to the Age of 21, to make any Marriage-Contract without the Conſent of their *Parents*, or, in caſe they are dead, of their *Guardians* and *Governors*; and that is one good end the *Church* propoſes in publiſhing the *Banns* of *Matrimony*, that the *Parents* and People concern'd may know whether they think fit to agree to their *Childrens* Choice or no. And that this End may not be defeated by the *Secrecy* of *Licences*, it is requir'd, that one of the Parties ſhould depoſe on *Oath*, that Conſent of the *Parents* is not wanting, before

you

you can obtain the *Licence.* This Care our Church takes, tho' much in vain, which ſufficiently ſhews her Opinion of the Matter, how far ſhe reckons the Conſent of *Parents* neceſſary.

It is but reaſonable, however, that we ſhould hear and conſider what may in this Caſe be anſwer'd by the *Children.* *Marriage* is certainly a State and Condition on which the Happineſs of Life does very much depend, more than indeed moſt People think on beforehand. To be confin'd to live with one perpetually, of whom we have no Liking and Eſteem, muſt certainly be a moſt uneaſy State. There had need be a great many good Qualities to reconcile a conſtant Converſation to one, even where there is ſome ſhare of Kindneſs and Affection; but without *Love*, the very beſt of all good Qualities will never make a conſtant Converſation eaſy and delightful; and whence proceed thoſe endleſs and innumerable domeſtick Miſeries, that plague and utterly confound ſo many Families, but from want of Love and Kindneſs in the Wife or Husband? From whence comes their Neglect and careleſs Management of Affairs at Home, and their profuſe and extravagant Expences abroad? In a word, it is not eaſy as it is not needful, to recount the *Evils* that riſe abundantly from the want of Conjugal Affection only; and ſince this is ſo certain, a Man or Woman runs the moſt fearful Hazard that can be, who marries without this Affection in themſelves, and without good Aſſurance of it in the other. And ſince it is impoſſible for any one to Love with another's Affections, but with their own, the *Parents* muſt conſider this, eſpecially how they engage their *Children* to Marry, where at leaſt a hopeful Proſpect of this *Love* does not appear, leſt while they are endeavouring to make their *Children* Happy, they make them of all Creatures the moſt Miſerable, and that irremediably ſo. If there be reaſon that Young People ſhould be left in any thing to themſelves, and to their own Liberty, it ſeems to be in the choice of thoſe with whom they are to live and

die,

die, with whom they are to venture being Happy or Unhappy all their Days. It is without doubt in nothing ſo neceſſary as in *Marriage*. Do you not know, ſays one of Old, That Marriage belongs to Us ourſelves, and muſt be Matter of our Choice? Our Affections are our Maſters, not our Servants: And you cannot by all your Power and Might, nor by your frequently reiterated Orders and Commands, cauſe me to Love or Hate where you ſhall fix. Then is Marriage like to be laſtingly Happy, when both agree in loving each the other; and therefore ſince I am to have a Wife or Husband the Partner of my Bed, and of all the Joys and Sorrows that are likely to befal me while I live, I muſt ſeek for one that I can like, I think, for ever. I do not ſay that this is all as reaſonable as it ſhou'd be, but there is Reaſon enough in it, to make the *Parents* very careful and conſidering, that they urge not their *Authority* too far in conſtraining their *Children* to Marry not only where there is no viſible Averſion, but where there is great likelihood that there will not be a good Agreement.

I do not ſee what it would avail any one to object againſt this, the great Power given by the *Laws* of the ancient *Greeks* and *Romans* to *Parents* over their Children. Thoſe *Laws* that gave them Power not only to ſell their *Children* for *Slaves*, but even to put them to *Death*, did doubtleſs impower to diſpoſe of them in *Marriage*, arbitrarily and without conſulting the Inclinations of their *Children*. But the Laws of *Chriſtians*, which free us from the *Bondage* of the *Moſaical Law*, ſet the Liberty of *Children* on a larger Bottom than it ſtood on in *Antiquity*. I ſee no Reaſon to think, that Parents are by Nature Maſters of the Freedom and Life of the Children. And Nature is the main Rule of *Command* and *Obedience* in *Parents* and *Children*. Thoſe Nations that made ſuch ſevere Laws againſt *Children*, had Reaſons for it, which probably ceaſe with us; beſides there is no inferring that the *Children* of other Nations, where no ſuch *Laws* are in being, are oblig'd to the ſame Obedience; and there-

fore

fore tho' the People of other Kingdoms had ſo abſolutely the Command of their *Children*, as to diſpoſe of them in *Marriage* how and where they pleaſed; yet is not their *Example* ſufficient to juſtify a *Parent* in doing the like, any further than the Thing is otherwiſe fit, among us. And it is very difficult to meet with a Caſe where the Thing ſhall be otherwiſe fit, when the *Child* cannot love nor like the Perſon whom the *Parent* would force him or her to Marry. *Children* are not ty'd to this ſtrict *Obedience* in this ſingle Point, only becauſe the *Children* of the *Jews*, or *Greeks*, or *Romans* might be. And Regard is alſo to be had to the *Cuſtoms* of the *Country*. The *Jews*, as all the People of the *Eaſt*, ſpeaking generally, did not ſuffer the *Women* to go abroad as ours do. They went to viſit a Relation or near Friend, and that ſparingly, and mixt not with common Company; which, with the Modeſty peculiar to that Sex, deprived them of the Opportunity of diſpoſing of themſelves, ſo that their Parents only muſt or could diſpoſe of them; and when they were once marry'd, they kept very much at Home, and ſaw but little ſtrange Company. The *Greeks* and *Romans* ſeem to have had more Liberty, but yet not near ſo much as ours have: This, I take it, ought to make ſome little Difference; for if the *Cuſtoms* of the *Country* allow the Women Liberty to ſee and to be ſeen of all, both before and after Marriage, they make it ſomewhat more reaſonable for them to chooſe their Partners with whom they are to live, not in Confinement, but at Liberty, that they may not afterwards diſlike them, nor be betray'd by ſuch their Liberty into new Liking, and Deſires of thoſe they can never obtain. And there is yet more Reaſon that the Sons of theſe Old People ſhould be entirely at the diſpoſal of their *Parents*, rather than the *Daughters*, becauſe Marriage was not half ſo grievous to them: for they were allow'd more *Wives* than One. *Divorces* were cheap and eaſy, and they took great Liberties beſides with whom they could; and therefore if they lik'd not the Condition or Perſon of a *Wife*, they

either

either wander'd from her Bed, and took to looſe Courſes, which they might do, it was ſo common, without much Scandal or ill Fame, or elſe they quickly found occaſion for *Divorce*; and therefore to be marry'd, tho' againſt their Liking and Conſent, was no great Hardſhip, the Cuſtoms of the Nation, the Licence of the Times, gave them a world of Liberty, and this made it much more reaſonable for the *Sons* to be entirely at their *Parents* Diſpoſal than the *Daughters*.

The Caſe of *Chriſtians* is quite different. They have no Liberty allow'd of any kind. *Chriſt* has oblig'd them to *Love* each other, and no other, even *till Death*. Each *Chriſtian* Pair is now reduc'd to ther *Original* Standard, and are to be as *Eve* and *Adam* were to each other, *Faithful* and *Kind*, without ſo much as Hope of changing. This makes it to be infinitely more the Concern of *Chriſtians*, to look they Marry none but whom they *Love*, and fully intend to *Love*, than of other People whoſe *Laws* and *Cuſtoms* allow'd them greater Liberties; and therefore it is not altogether fair to urge the Inſtances and Examples of theſe ſort of People ſo often in a *Chriſtian* Kingdom, for they might much more reaſonably, becauſe more eaſily, ſubmit to the Will and Command of their *Parents*, than *Chriſtians* in ſuch caſes of Marriage can. And when *Parents* remember that their Commands are to lay Obligations on their Children, that will laſt when they themſelves are dead and gone, and from which they never can be freed, tho' all the Evils in the World ſhould happen to them, they will be cautious and ſparing how they lay ſuch Commands upon them, againſt their Inclination and Liking. However, there will be always ſome difference between *Childrens* refuſing, with all Submiſſion and Reſpect, to comply with the Commands of their *Parents*, in Marrying ſuch whom they are ſure they do not Love; and their Marrying where they will, without the Conſent, or againſt the Commands of their *Parents*. The *Diſobedience* of the one is much more pardonable and pitiable than the

Diſobe-

Diſobedience of the other, becauſe it is much more in the *Childrens* power to keep themſelves free from engaging their Affections, than it is to ſettle them where the Parents pleaſe. And to refuſe to marry when commanded, is not ſo likely to do any Injury or Diſhonour, as to marry againſt Command is to do both or either; and yet in excuſe of ſuch Diſobedience, as marrying of themſelves, Reſpect and Conſideration are to be had to the Peoples Age and Condition.

The Cuſtoms of the World, and Reaſon, conſent in giving ſuch Perſons ſtill more Liberty, the Older they grow. They are not to be Maſters of themſelves while *Young*, becauſe their Reaſon and Underſtanding are imperfect. They have not Judgment enough to conſider what is *Good* or *Evil* for them. Their Paſſions and Affections are ſtrong and prevalent, always looking towards Pleaſure, and they have not Conſideration enough to correct or check the Diſorders of their Will and Deſire. If theſe be the true Cauſes why they ought to be ſubject to the Commands of *Parents* and *Superiors*, while *Young*, it is but fit, that as theſe wear off, and Reaſon, Underſtanding, and Judgment ſucceed, their Chains would wear away, and their Reſtraint be leſſen'd. This is generally allow'd in Second *Marriages*. The firſt does ſo emancipate and free the *Children* from the *Parents* Power, that it is not accounted *Diſobedience*, when they marry the ſecond time without Conſent. Now this is not, becauſe the *Parents* are no longer *Parents*, nor the *Children* ty'd to Dutiful *Obedience*, but becauſe the greater Age and Reaſon make them fitter to conſider themſelves, and to look after their own Affairs. 'Tis indeed a *Maxim*, that they who are once emancipated and ſet free, do never return to *Servitude*, and therefore the *Children* being once freed from their *Parents* Authority by *Marriage*, come not again under their Power as to a ſecond Marriage. But I believe, that Fulneſs of Age, Maturity of Judgment, Sobriety, and Steadineſs of Mind and Temper, are better Reaſons

for

for *Childrens* Liberty, and Exemption from ſome Commands of their *Parents*, than their being once marry'd. For if a Minor marry *diſobediently*, and be afterwards ſet at Liberty by his Partner's *Death*, while he is ſtill Young and under Age, whatever the *Laws* may do, yet Reaſon certainly ſubjects him to his *Parents* Power, in the Choice of a Second Wife, as it did of the firſt. He is not emancipated by his firſt *Folly* and *Diſobedience*, he ſtill wants the Care and Tutelage of his *Parents*; wherefore nothing but Age, Diſcretion, and Ability to look after themſelves, exempt Children from the *Subjection* of their *Parents*, in matters that are ſo Perſonal, and ſo much the *Childrens* own Concern. *Parents* are eſpecially to have regard to the *Age* and Wiſdom of their *Children*; and the Childrens *Diſobedience* in theſe caſes will be more or leſs excuſable, as Wiſdom and Age ſet them more at Liberty.

Sometimes the Neglect of Parents will, in a great meaſure, excuſe the *Childrens* marrying themſelves. If *Parents* are backward in taking ſuch Care as is but neceſſary, *Children* cannot be blamed in providing for their own Settlement: And therefore ſome *Laws* have left them wholly at their Liberty to marry at ſuch an *Age*, if their Parents lookt not after it before. Theſe, and many other things, may be ſaid in behalf of *Children*, either refuſing to marry ſuch as their Parents command them to Marry, or that marry according to their own liking againſt Command. And there is ſo much to be ſaid on both ſides, and ſo many things to be conſidered particular to each, that it is neither ſafe nor true to affirm, that all *Parents* in all caſes have a right to a Compliance and *Obedience* of their *Children*, or that all *Children* are at Liberty to marry and diſpoſe of themſelves without the Conſent of their *Parents*: For neither of theſe Propoſitions are unexceptionably true. *Parents* have a great Power, but they muſt uſe it, as truly they moſt generally will and do, like *Parents*, tenderly and kindly; and Children have a great *Duty*, but they are not

ty'd

ty'd like *Slaves* in all caſes, and with Bonds that will laſt for ever; but when they do not *Obey*, they muſt do it with Unwillingneſs, and great Reluctance, and it muſt be in caſes of great and laſting Moment and Concern, ſuch as when repreſented to fair, equal, wiſe and underſtanding People, they may find themſelves both pitied for their Trial, and approved for their Reſolution: That thoſe who would be glad that *Children* ſhou'd *Obey* their *Parents*, may acknowledge it was reaſonable they ſhould not be Obey'd in theſe *Particulars*: For, to ſay Truth, the Affections of *Parents* are generally ſo ſtrong, and their Intention ſo good towards their *Children*, that the Preſumption of Right is generally on their ſide, and the Cauſe of the *Children* had need be very juſt, righteous, and apparently good and reaſonable, when they diſpute or contend with *Parents*: Becauſe the Bias of the whole World is, with much Reaſon, on their ſide againſt the *Children*.

In a word, when the certain Laws of God, and the Laws of the Land, and of our Superiors, lay their Commands or Prohibitions on *Children*, the *Parents* have nothing to do but to forward their *Obedience*. They are not to enjoin any thing prejudicial to the Obligations they lie under to God and to their Country, nor to command them in oppoſition to them: And when they do, they are not to be heard or underſtood. The Children are to go on ſteadily in their *Duty* to both, and to miſtake their *Parents* Orders, with Submiſſion, and Reſpect, and Tenderneſs. And in the caſe of *Marriages*, the *Parents* are to take all due Care to ſee their *Children* well diſpos'd of, according to their Age, and Quality, and Tempers, remembring they are then laying the *Grounds* and Foundation of their Happineſs or Miſery, and not to let the conſideration of *Fortune* and *Eſtate* ſo preponderate and over-weigh all other Conſiderations of Form and Favour, Birth and Education, Virtue and good Qualities, as to neglect them all; and when the *Parents* have done this, the *Children* are to Obey as far as poſſibly they can. The little

little Objections of the *Fancy*, and the Niceties that are commonly made on thoſe Occaſions, muſt yield to the mature Deliberations of the *Parents*. It were undoubtedly beſt, and moſt to be wiſh'd, that both the *Parents* and the *Children* might ſo chooſe that each ſhould approve the other's Choice, and that, as *Homer* ſays of *Penelope*, ſhe might be beſtow'd by her Father upon whom ſhe pleas'd: For otherwiſe, they will not both be eaſy, but when that comes to paſs, the *Authority* of *Parents*, and the *Duty* of *Children* are both ſecur'd and reconcil'd. But if this will not be, 'twill be difficult to avoid committing a Fault, on one ſide or the other. If the *Parent* offer what the Child cannot poſſibly aſſent to, and what wiſe and unconcern'd Perſons blame, condemn and reject, upon a reaſonable Information of the whole Proceedings, if ſuch Refuſal of the Offer be made with Decency, and great Humility upon the *Childrens* part, it will not fall under the Head of ſinful *Diſobedience*. They may ſtand off with *Innocence* and *Safety*, and yet may *Honour* as they ought their *Father* and *Mother*. But if ſuch Offer be made by the *Parents*, as wiſe and good Men in the like Caſe and Circumſtances may make, without Folly and without Injury, and there be nothing handſom or material to object, ſuch as would ſatisfy a wiſe, a ſober, and impartial Man, the *Duty* of *Children* ſo refuſing will not be ſafe. They are doubtleſs obliged to *Obey* their *Parents* in theſe Caſes; and if *Children*, who are under Age, and wholly in their Father's Cuſtody and Power, and part of his Houſe, will venture to engage themſelves, without his Conſent, or againſt his Command, to their Diſhonour and Prejudice, they will be guilty of ſinful *Diſobedience*, and muſt ſeek the Forgiveneſs they will want, both at God's Hand and his.

The *Duty* of *Children* to Parents, as has hitherto been conſider'd, has relation chiefly to the *Father*. We muſt now diſcourſe of it as it relates to the *Mother*, both while the *Father* is *alive*, and after he is *dead*. The *Mother* is indeed

indeed in Scripture always included with the Father; *Honour thy Father and thy Mother. He that ſmiteth his Father or Mother ſhall ſurely be put to Death. Curſed be he that ſetteth light by his Father and Mother. My Son, hear the Inſtructions of thy Father, and forſake not the Law of thy Mother*; and ſo in many other places. Indeed there is equal Reaſon in moſt Caſes why we ſhould do ſo, and in ſome greater. The *Mothers* undergo moſt Pain and Sorrow for their *Children*, bear all the Trouble of their *Infancy* and *Childhood*, do all they can for them, and intend them much more, have at leaſt the ſame, but generally a much greater Affection to them than the Fathers, and the ſame Intereſt and Concern for their good and welfare; wherefore in Nature, true Reaſon, and Gratitude, the *Children* are oblig'd to make no difference between the *Father* and *Mother*, in their *Obſervance* of them, and *Obedience* to them.

But becauſe the *Father* is alſo Superior to the *Mother*, both in Natural Strength, in Wiſdom, and by God's Appointment, and that there is no *Obeying* contrary Commands; the *Children* are eſpecially to Obey their *Fathers*, in Caſes where they have Power to command; and where they cannot *Obey* both *Parents* together, then they muſt never obey one *Parent* to the Prejudice of the *other*. The *Father* has no Right to command the *Children* any thing undutiful, diſ-reſpectful, or injurious to the *Mother*; but if it happens, that the Inclinations or Deſires of the *Mother* ſhould differ from thoſe of the *Father* in choice of Trade, or Calling, or in Matches for the Children, or in other Things of Moment, whereby the Children muſt diſpleaſe one *Parent* by complying with the other, the Father is the Superior Authority, and muſt be obey'd, becauſe both the *Laws* of *God* and *Man* have ſubjected the *Wife* to the *Husband*. She is not preſum'd to have a Will contrary to her Husband's, and therefore the *Child* diſobeys not his *Mother*, who obeys his Father's Command, becauſe the Mother is to be obedient alſo: and the Caſe is not very much alter'd,

tho'

tho' the *Father* does not lay expreſs Command upon the *Child*, but is paſſive and content, likes and approves the Choice he makes, tho' the *Mother* be wholly averſe to it; in ſuch Caſe the Father is to be regarded, for he is the proper Superior.

But when the *Mother* is the only *Parent*, then her Authority increaſes, and ſhe is then ſolely to be regarded. Indeed the Civil *Laws* do generally free the *Sons* at ſuch an Age, ſuppoſing them the Maſters of the Family, and by the Advantage of their *Sex* and *Education*, fit to govern and diſpoſe of themſelves and their Affairs. The Daughters, 'tis true, are kept longer in Subjection, being ſuppoſed to want the Care and Wiſdom of their *Parents* longer; but growing up to Liberty, as they advance in Years and Underſtanding. There cannot be any exact Rules in ſuch Caſes: For the Wiſdom of either *Parent* or *Children* muſt neceſſarily make ſome alteration in the meaſure of *Obedience*, in reſpect to ſome Commands which relate nearly to the Children, as Marriage eſpecially does.

And even in Caſes, where the *Sons* and *Daughters* may reaſonably be preſum'd at Liberty, and would otherwiſe take and uſe that Liberty, yet unleſs it be a matter of great Moment, it ſhould not eaſily be ventur'd on, to the *Mother*'s great Sorrow. For the Grief of a *Parent* is not to be occaſion'd cheaply and lightly. Much will be ſuffer'd by a dutiful good-natur'd *Child*, before he will afflict and grieve his *Parent*; and ſince this is eſpecially the *Infirmity* and Feebleneſs of *Mothers*, the *Children* are oblig'd to greater Care and Circumſpection in their Behaviour towards them, to prevent their Sorrows; for every thing that gives them Grief, is a ſort of *Diſobedience*, and all *Diſobedience* can never be remember'd by *Children*, without much Trouble and Remorſe; it will dwell continually upon them, and haunt them like an *Evil* Spirit. They will a thouſand times wiſh they had behav'd themſelves more dutifully, kindly, and obediently, and rather gone without their

Deſires,

Deſires, than have occaſion'd any Trouble or Sorrow to their *Parents*.

The laſt thing *Children* owe their Parents is *Support* and *Suſtenance*, which is evidently comprehended under the Word *Honour*. It is thus taken in *Timothy*, *Honour Widows that are Widows indeed*, that is, let the Widows who are in Want, and behave themſelves ſoberly, diſcreetly, and chaſtly, be reliev'd and maintain'd among you, and let the *Elders* that rule well be counted worthy of double *Honour*, of a Maintenance better than ordinary.

The *Jews* were remarkably kind and tender to their *Parents* in Diſtreſs. It was a common Saying with them, *You muſt Honour God with your Subſtance, if you have it; but you muſt Honour your Parents whether you have it or no*, for you muſt beg for them; and more than that, you muſt *Work*, tho' it were in publick Houſes of *Correction*, to help your *Parents*. This I believe was the Foundation of the *Parents* Power to Sell their *Children*; it muſt be when they knew they cou'd not be maintained but by ſuch *Sale*, or when they cou'd not themſelves maintain their *Children*, and therefore ſold them that they might live. The Practice is too Barbarous and Unnatural, to be ſupported by any other Ground or Reaſon. Nothing but ſuch extreme Neceſſity could make it tolerable. Such a Power is not then ſtrictly juſt, but the Exerciſe of it is excuſable becauſe it is unavoidable. This barbarous Cuſtom remains ſtill among the unciviliz'd Nations of *Africa* and *America*; but it is entirely aboliſh'd by *Chriſtians*, and the more poliſh'd People of the *Infidels*.

Hierocles ſays, we muſt *Honour our Parents* exceedingly, affording them moſt chearfully the Service of our *Bodies* and the Uſe *of our Wealth*. Among the *Romans*, if a *Son* was quite emancipated and free from his *Father*'s Government, yet if his *Father* came to want, and were deny'd by his Son, the *Son* for his *Ingratitude* was to return again unto his *Father*'s Service. By *Solon*'s Law, the *Son* indeed might deny this Aliment and Suſtenance to his

his *Father*, in caſe the *Father* had neglected ſo to educate *the Son*, as to have put him in a way of making ſuch Proviſion for his indigent Parent. If he neither put him out to any *Trade*, nor taught him how to get his *Living*, it was preſum'd the *Father* had in a manner expos'd him to Miſery, and therefore deſerv'd not the return of Love and Kindneſs he had never ſhewn. But this was only to conſtrain the *Parent* to look after the Education of his *Children*, to make them thereby the more uſeful Members of the *Commonwealth*. It exempted the Children from the Legal *Penalties* that otherwiſe might be inflicted on ſuch unnatural Refuſal, but it took not away the Obligation the *Children* had by Nature to provide for their diſtreſt *Parents*; even this ſevere *Law* ty'd not the Children to be cruel and undutiful, but intended to puniſh the *Parents* Folly and Neglect, by leaving it to the *Children* to deal with their *Parents* as they pleas'd, which otherwiſe they might not do, but were oblig'd to provide for them. For this *Support* and *Maintenance* of *Parents* is a Thing ſo naturally and neceſſarily due, that no *Laws* can tie the *Children* not to afford it, and according to their beſt Abilities. It wou'd be due even to a *Traitor* and proſcrib'd Perſon; that is, bare Maintenance would be due from *Children* to their *Parents* in ſuch hard Caſes.

Theſe Reflexions on the *Duty* of *Children* to their *Parents*, have been made, chiefly as it is the Command of God; I ſhall now conſider it as a Moral *Virtue*, and that with particular *Regard* to the *Sex* that diſtinguiſhes the *Daughter*.

Virginity is firſt in Order of Time, and if we take St. *Paul*'s Judgment, in reſpect of Excellence alſo. Indeed ſhe who preſerves herſelf in that *State*, upon the Account he mentions in his Firſt Epiſtle to the *Corinthians*, *that ſhe may care for the things that are of the Lord*, that ſhe may be *holy* both in *Body* and *Spirit*, deſerves a greet deal of *Veneration*, as making one of the neareſt Approaches to the *Angelical State*. Accordingly in the Primitive

Primitive Times ſuch a Virginity was had in ſingular *Eſtimation*, and by the Aſſignment of the *Schoolmen* has a particular *Coronet* of *Glory* belonging to it. Nay even among the *Heathens* a conſecrated *Virgin* was look'd on as a Thing moſt *Sacred*. The *Roman* Veſtals had extraordinary Privileges allow'd them by the *State*, and they were generally held in ſuch Reverence, that *Teſtaments* and other *Depoſitums* of the greateſt Truſt were uſually committed to their Cuſtody, as to the ſureſt and moſt inviolable *Sanctuary*. Nay their Preſence was enough to ſave convicted *Malefactors*; the *Magiſtrates*, when they appear'd, veiling their *Faces*, and giving up the *Criminal* to the commanding Interceſſion of *Virgin* Innocence.

As to the Conſtrained *Vows* of the greater Part of the *Virgin* Recluſes in the *Roman* Church, the Manner of compelling young Women to take the Veil, for the moſt part reduces a Cloiſter to a Priſon. Moſt of thoſe who make *voluntary* Vows among them, fly to a *Convent* to avoid a Forced *Match*, or to lament a *Forbidden* one; while many of the older *Recluſes* flatter themſelves, that they ſhall merit by *Retirement* a Pardon for the *Liberties* of their *Youth*. A *Single* Life is doubtleſs a very great Help to a *Godly one*; and tho' we have no *Nunneries* to lock up our *Virgins* in, yet there be *Nuns* who are not profeſt. She who has devoted her Heart to God, and the better to ſecure her Intereſt againſt the moſt inſinuating Rival, human Love, which ſhe intends never to admit to have Place in it, and therefore prays that ſhe may not, does by theſe humble Purpoſes conſecrate herſelf to *Heaven*, and perhaps more acceptably than if her *Preſumption* ſhould make her more poſitive, and engage her in a *Vow* ſhe is not ſure to perform.

Indeed this is not a Caſe which needs moſt ſtating in our *Clime*, wherein, as *cold* as it is, *Women* are ſo little tranſported with this Zeal of voluntary *Virginity*, that there are but few can find Patience for it when neceſſary. An old *Maid* is now thought ſuch a Curſe, as no *Poetick Fury* can exceed. She is look'd on as the moſt Diſtreſt

Creature in Nature; and I ſo far yield to the Opinion, as to confeſs it ſo to thoſe who are kept in that State againſt their *Wills*. But ſure the Original of that Miſery is from the *Deſire*, not the *Reſtraint* of *Marriage*. Let them but ſuppreſs that once, and the other will never be their Infelicity. However I muſt not be ſo unkind to the *Sex*, as to think 'tis always ſuch Deſire that gives them ſuch Averſion to *Celibacy:* I doubt not but many are frighted with the vulgar Contempt under which that *State* lies; for which if there be no Cure, yet there is the ſame Armour againſt this as there is againſt all other cauſeleſs *Reproaches*, to ſcorn it. Yet I am a little inclin'd to believe there may be a Prevention in this Caſe: If the ſuperannuated *Virgins* would behave themſelves with Gravity and Reſervedneſs, addict themſelves to the ſtricteſt Virtue and Piety, they would give the World ſome Cauſe to believe, 'twas not their *Neceſſity* but their *Choice*, which firſt kept them unmarry'd; that they were pre-engag'd to a better *Amour*, eſpouſed to the ſpiritual Bridegroom; and this would give them, among the ſoberer ſort, at leaſt the *Reverence* and *Eſteem* of *Matrons:* Or if, after all Caution and Endeavour, they chance to fall under the Tongues of malicious *Slanderers*, this is no more than happens in all other Inſtances of *Duty*; and if Contempt be to be avoided, *Chriſtianity* itſelf muſt be quitted, as well as Virgin *Chaſtity*. But if, on the other hand, they endeavour to diſguiſe their *Age*, by all the Impoſtures and Gaieties of a youthful Dreſs and Behaviour, if they ſtill herd themſelves among the youngeſt and vaineſt Company, betray a young Mind in an aged Body, this muſt certainly expoſe them to Scorn and Cenſure. If no Plays, nor Balls, nor Dancing-bout can eſcape them, People will undoubtedly conclude that they deſire to put off themſelves, to meet with *Chapmen*, who ſo conſtantly keep the *Fairs*. I wiſh therefore they would more univerſally try the former Expedients, which I am confident is the beſt Amulet againſt the Reproach they ſo much dread, and may alſo deliver them from the

Danger

Danger of a more coſtly Remedy, I mean that of an unequal and imprudent Match, which many have ruſh'd upon, as they have ran frighted from the other; and ſo, by an unhappy Contradiction, do both ſtay long and marry haſtily, gall their *Necks*, to ſpare their *Ears*, and run into the *Yoke* rather than hear ſo ſlight and unreaſonable a *Reproach*. They need not, I think, be upbraided with the *Folly* of ſuch an *Election*, ſince their own Experience is, to many of them, but too ſevere a *Monitor*.

Having ſaid thus much to the *Elder* Virgins, I muſt in the next Place addreſs myſelf to the *Younger*. And here the two grand Elements eſſential to the *Virgin* State, are *Modeſty* and *Obedience*, which tho' neceſſary to all, yet are in a more eminent Degree requir'd of the young *Virgin*, in whom *Modeſty* ſhould appear in its higheſt *Elevation*, and come up to *Shamefacedneſs*. Her Look, her Speech, her whole Behaviour, ſhould own an humble Diſtruſt of herſelf: She is to look on herſelf but as a *Novice*, a *Probationer* in the World, and muſt take this Time rather to learn and obſerve, than to dictate and preſcribe. Indeed there is ſcarce any thing looks more ſhocking than to ſee a young *Maid* too forward and confident in her Talk: The very Name of *Virgin* imports a moſt critical Niceneſs in that Point. Every indecent Curioſity and impure *Fancy*, is a deflowring of the *Mind*, and every the leaſt Corruption of the *Mind* gives ſome degrees of Defilement to the Body too: For between the State of pure immaculate *Virginity*, and arrant *Proſtitution*, there are many intermediate Steps, and ſhe that makes any of them, is ſo far departed from her firſt Integrity. She that liſtens to any wanton Diſcourſe has violated her *Ears*; ſhe that ſpeaks any, her *Tongue*; every immodeſt Glance vitiates her *Eye*, and every the ſlighteſt Act of *Dalliance* leaves ſomething of *Stain* and *Sullage* behind it. There is therefore a moſt rigorous Caution requiſite herein; for as nothing is more clear and white than a perfect *Virginity*, ſo every the *leaſt* Spot or Soil is the more diſcernible. Beſides *Youth* is for the

moſt part flexible, it eaſily warps into a *Crookedneſs*, and therefore can never ſet itſelf too far from a *Temptation*. We are fain to skreen and ſhelter our tender Bloſſoms, becauſe every unkindly Air nips and deſtroys them: And nothing can be more nice and delicate than a *Maiden* Virtue, which ought not to be expos'd to any of thoſe malignant *Airs* that may blaſt and corrupt it; of which, God knows, there are too many; ſome that blow from *within*, and others from *without*.

Of the Firſt there is none more miſchievous than *Curioſity*: A Temptation which fail'd human Nature in *Paradiſe*, and a feeble Girl then ought not ſure to truſt herſelf with that, which ſubdued her better fortify'd *Parent*. The Truth is, an affected Ignorance cannot be ſo blameable in other Caſes, as it is commendable in This. Indeed it is the ſureſt and moſt invincible Guard; for ſhe who is Curious to know indecent Things, 'tis odds but ſhe will too ſoon and too dearly buy the Learning. The ſuppreſſing and deteſting of ſuch Curioſities is that eminent fundamental Piece of *Continence* I would recommend to them, as that which will protect and ſecure all the reſt. But when they have ſet this *Guard* upon themſelves, they muſt provide againſt Foreign Aſſaults, the moſt dangerous of which I take to be *ill* Company, and Idleneſs. Againſt the *Firſt* they muſt provide by a prudent Choice of Converſation, which ſhould generally be of their own *Sex*, yet not all of that neither, but ſuch as will at leaſt entertain them innocently if not profitably. Againſt the *Second* they may ſecure themſelves by a conſtant Series of *Employment*; I mean not ſuch frivolous ones as are more *Idle* than doing nothing, but ſuch as are ingenious and ſome way worth their Time, as Writing, Needle-work, Languages, Muſick, or the like. But I confeſs I know not how to reduce to the Head of rational Employment many of thoſe Things, which from Divertiſement are now ſtept up to be the ſolemn Buſineſs of many Young Ladies, and I doubt of ſome Old; ſuch as *Gaming* and reading

reading *Romances:* Of the former I have ſpoken in another Place, and of the latter it is alſo very neceſſary to ſpeak, there being a great many young Ladies who waſte a conſiderable Part of their Time in that trivial and often dangerous Study. Their *Youth* may, I confeſs, a little adapt it to them when they were Children, and I wiſh they made no worſe Uſe of them as they grow up, but I fear they often leave ill Impreſſions behind them: Thoſe amorous Paſſions which they deſign to paint to the utmoſt Life, are apt to inſinuate themſelves into unwary Readers, and by an unhappy Inverſion a *Copy* ſhall produce an *Original.* When a poor young Creature ſhall read there of ſome triumphant Beauty that has I know not how many Captive Knights proſtrate at her Feet, ſhe will probably be tempted to think it a fine Thing, and may reflect how much ſhe loſes Time, that has not ſubdued one Heart: Her Buſineſs will then be to ſpread her Nets, lay her Toils to catch ſome Body, who will more fatally enſnare her; and when ſhe has once wound herſelf into an Amour, thoſe Authors and ſubtle Caſuiſts for all difficult Caſes that may occur in it, will inſtruct her in the neceſſary Artifices of deluding *Parents* and *Friends*, and put her Ruin perfectly in her own Power. This ſeems to be ſo natural a Conſequent of this ſort of Study, that of all the Divertiſements that look ſo innocently, they can ſcarce fall upon any more hazardous. Indeed 'tis very difficult to imagine what vaſt Miſchief is done to the World by the falſe Notions and Images of things, particularly of *Love* and *Honour*, thoſe nobleſt Concerns of Human Life, repreſented in theſe *Mirrors.* But when we conſider, as I have obſerv'd already, upon what Principles the *Duelliſts* and *Hectors* of the Age defend their *Outrages*, and how great a Devotion is paid to Luſt, inſtead of Virtuous Love, we cannot be to ſeek for the Goſpel which makes theſe Doctrines appear Orthodox.

As for the Entertainments which young Women find abroad, they may be innocent, or otherwiſe, according

as they are managed. The common Intercourſe of Civility is a Debt to *Humanity*, and for that Reaſon mutual Viſits may often be neceſſary; and ſo, in ſome degree, may be ſeveral harmleſs and healthful Recreations which may call them abroad. But to be always wandring is the Condition of a Vagabond, and of the two 'tis better to be a *Priſoner* to one's *Home* than a *Stranger*. *Solomon* links it with ſome very unlaudable Qualities of a Woman, that *her Feet abide not in her Houſe*. 'Tis an unhappy Impotence not to be able to ſtay at home, when there is any thing to be ſeen abroad; when any Mask, or Revel, and Jollity of others, muſt be their Rack and Torment, if they cannot get to it. Alas! ſuch Meetings are not ſo ſure to be ſafe, that they need be frequent; and they are of all others leaſt like to be ſafe to thoſe who much dote on them: Wherefore thoſe that find they do ſo, had need to counterbias their Minds; and ſet them to ſomething better, and by more ſerious Entertainments ſupplant thoſe Vanities, which at the beſt are childiſh, and may often prove worſe: It being too probable that thoſe *Dinahs* that are ſtill gadding, tho' on Pretence to ſee *only the Daughters of the Land*, may at laſt meet with a Son of *Hamor*.

Dreſſing, another great Devourer of Time, has been ſpoken of under other Heads: To which I ſhall only add, that thoſe who love to be ſeen abroad, will be ſure to be ſeen in the moſt exact Form. This is what does not ſteal, but challenge their Time. What they waſte here, is with Authority; it being by the verdict of this Age, the proper Buſineſs, the one Science wherein a young Lady is to be perfectly verſt, ſo that now all virtuous Emulation is converted into this ſingle Ambition, who ſhall excel in *Dreſs*. This is hardly excuſable in *Youth*, but intolerable in *Age*. Some Allowances are to be given to young People, who cannot be ſuppos'd to have quite forgotten the Toys and Vanities of Childhood; and beſides, thoſe who deſign Marriage, may lawfully make uſe of the Advantage of decent *Ornaments*, and not

by

by negligent Rudeneſs of their *Dreſs* belye *Nature*, and render themſelves leſs amiable than ſhe has made them. But all this being granted, 'twill by no Means juſtify that exceſſive Curioſity and Solicitude, that Expence of Time and Money too, which is now uſed. *Moderation* is much likelier to ſucceed, than the contrary Extravagance: Among the Prudenter ſort of Men, I am ſure it is, if it be not among the Looſe and Vain, againſt which it will be their Guard, and ſo do them greater Service. Certainly, he that chooſes a *Wife* for thoſe Qualities for which a wiſe Man would refuſe her, underſtands ſo little what *Marriage* is, as portends no great Felicity to her that ſhall have him. But if they deſire to marry Men of *Sobriety* and *Diſcretion*, they are oblig'd in Juſtice to bring the ſame Qualities they expect, which will be very ill ordered by that Exceſs and Vanity we now talk of. For to ſpeak a plain, tho' perhaps ungrateful Truth, this, together with ſome of the modiſh Liberties now in uſe, is that which keeps ſo many young Ladies about the Town unmarried, 'till they loſe the Epithet of *Young*. Sober Men are afraid to venture upon a Humour ſo diſagreeing to their own, leſt whilſt, according to the primitive Reaſon of *Marriage*, they ſeek a *Help*, they eſpouſe a *Ruin*. But this is eſpecially dreadful to a plain *Country Gentleman*, who looks upon one of theſe *Fine* Women as a gaudy *Idol*, to whom, if he once becomes a *Votary*, he muſt ſacrifice a great part of his *Fortune*, and all his Content. How reaſonable that Apprehenſion is, the many Wrecks of conſiderable Families do too evidently atteſt. But I preſume ſome of the nicer Ladies have ſuch a Contempt of any thing that they pleaſe to call *Ruſtick*, that they will not much regret the loſing of thoſe whom they never intended to gain. Not at leaſt while they are in purſuit or hopes of others, tho' when thoſe fail, theſe will be look'd on as a welcome Reſerve, and therefore 'twill be no Prudence to cut themſelves off from the laſt Reſort, leſt they, as many have done, betake themſelves to much worſe. For as in many In-

ſtances, 'tis the *Country* which feeds and maintains the Grandeur of the *Town*, ſo of all *Commerces*, there *Marriages* would ſooneſt fail, if all *rural* Supplies were cut off. I ſhall not enlarge further upon *Dreſs*, but refer to the *Head*, which treats of it. I have, in this, diſcourſed of Obedience to Parents, and in both may perhaps be thought uncourtly, and too much out of the *Mode*; for I know this Age has ſo great a Contempt of the former, that it is but Matter of Scorn to alledge any of their Cuſtoms, elſe I ſhould ſay, that the Liberties which are now taken would then have been ſtarted at. They that ſhould then have ſeen a young Maid rambling abroad without her *Mother*, or ſome other Prudent Perſon, would have look'd on her as a *Stray*, and thought but a Neighbourly Office to have brought her home. Whereas now 'tis a rarity to ſee them in any Company graver than themſelves, and ſhe that goes with her *Parent*, unleſs it be a *Parent* as wild as herſelf, thinks ſhe does but walk abroad with her *Jailor:* But ſure there are no ſmall Miſchiefs that attend this Liberty, for it leaves them perfectly to the Choice of their Company, a thing of too weighty Importance for giddy Heads to determine, who will be ſure to elect ſuch as are of their own Humour, with whom they may keep a Traffick of little Impertinences, and trifling Entertainments, and ſo by conſequence, condemn themſelves never to grow wiſer, which they might do by an ingenious Converſation. Nay 'tis well if that *Negative* will be the worſt, for it gives Opportunity to any that have ill Deſigns upon them. It will be eaſy getting into their Company, who have no Guard to keep any body out; and as eaſy by little Flatteries to inſinuate into their good Graces, who have not Sagacity to diſcern to what inſiduous Purpoſes thoſe Blandiſhments are directed; and when once they begin to nibble at the *Bait*, to be pleas'd with the Courtſhip, 'tis odds they do not eſcape the *Hook*.

Alas! how many poor innocent Creatures have thus been indiſcernibly enſnared? have at firſt perhaps liked the

the *Wit* and *Rallery*, perhaps the *Language* and *Addreſs*, then the *Freedom* and *good Humour*, 'till at laſt they came to like the *Perſon*. It is therefore a moſt neceſſary Caution for young Women, not to truſt too much to their own Conduct, but to their Dependence on thoſe to whom God and Nature have ſubjected them, and to look on it not as their Reſtraint and Burden, but as their Shelter and Protection; for when once the Authority of a *Parent* comes to be deſpis'd, tho' in the higheſt Inſtance, it lays the Foundation of utmoſt *Diſobedience*. She that will not be preſcrib'd to in the Choice of her Ordinary Diverting Company, will be leſs ſo in chooſing the fix'd Companions of her Life; and we find it often eventually true, that thoſe who govern themſelves in the former, will not be govern'd by their Friends in the latter, but by Pre-engagements of their own, prevent their *Election* for them. Of this I have treated in the former part of this Head; and ſhall further obſerve, that the *Folly* and *Sin* of ſuch *Diſobedience* are equal. They Injure and Afflict their *Parents*, but they generally Ruin and Undo themſelves, and that upon a double Account. As to the *Secular* Part, thoſe that are ſo raſh to as make ſuch Matches, cannot be imagin'd ſo Provident as to examine how agreeable it is to their Intereſt, or to contrive for any thing beyond the *Marriage*: The Thoughts of their future *Temporal* Conditions, like thoſe of the *Eternal*, can find no room amidſt their fooliſh Raptures, but as if Love were indeed that *Deity* which the *Poets* feign'd it, they depend on it for all, and take no further Care. And the Event does commonly too ſoon inſtruct them in the Deceitfulneſs of that Truſt, Love being ſo unable to ſupport them, that it cannot maintain itſelf, but quickly expires when it has brought the Lovers into thoſe Straits from whence it cannot reſcue them. Indeed it does but play the *Decoy* with them, brings them into the *Nooſe*, and then retires. For when Secular Wants begin to pinch them, all the Tranſports of their Kindneſs

do uſually convert into mutual Accuſations, for having made each other Miſerable.

There is no Reaſon to expect it ſhould end better, when it began ſo ill, they forfeit the Title of the Divine Bleſſing, nay, they put themſelves out of a Capacity to ask it: It being a ridiculous Impudence to beg God to proſper the *Tranſgreſſions of his Law*. Such *Weddings* ſeem to invoke only ſome of the *Poetick, Romantick Deities, Venus* and *Hymen*, from whence they are to derive a Happineſs as fictitious as the Gods that are to ſend it. Let all *Virgins* then religiouſly obſerve this part of *Obedience* to their *Parents*, that they may not only have their Benediction, but God's; and to that Purpoſe, let this be laid as a fundamental Rule, that they never hearken to any Propoſal of *Marriage* made them from any other Hand; but when any ſuch Overture is made, let the *Virgin* divert the *Addreſs* from herſelf, and direct it to her *Parents*, which will be the beſt Teſt imaginable for any Pretender. For if he know himſelf worthy of her, he will not fear to avow his Deſign to them; and if he decline that, 'tis a certain Symptom, he is conſcious of ſomething that he knows will not give him a valuable Conſideration. This Courſe will repel no Suitor, but ſuch as it is their Intereſt not to admit. Beſides, 'tis moſt agreeable to the Virgin Modeſty, which ſhould make *Marriage* rather an Act of their *Obedience* than their Choice; and they that think their Friends too ſlow-pac'd in the Matter, and ſeek to out-run them, give Cauſe to ſuſpect they are ſpurr'd on by ſomewhat too warm Deſires.

As a *Daughter* is neither to anticipate nor contradict the Will of her *Parent*, ſo, to hang the Balance even, I muſt ſay ſhe is not oblig'd to force her own, by marrying where ſhe cannot *love*. Tho' I have handled this Matter in the preceding Pages, yet it being the moſt important Event of Human Life, I cannot forbear theſe further Reflexions; and not having preſcrib'd myſelf any ſtrict *Form* in theſe *Eſſays*, I ſhall frequently conſider things

again

again and again, as new Matter occurs. A *Negative* Voice in a Caſe of this Importance, is ſure as much the *Child*'s Right as the *Parents*. 'Tis true, ſhe ought well to examine the Grounds of her Averſion, and if they prove only Childiſh and Fanciful, ſhe ſhould endeavour to correct them by Reaſon and ſober Conſideration; but if, after all, ſhe cannot bring herſelf to like the Perſon her *Parents* would impoſe upon her, ſhe ſhould not proceed to marry. I cannot ſee how ſhe can, without a Sacrilegious Hypocriſy, vow ſo ſolemnly to Love, where ſhe at the Inſtant actually abhors. And when the Marriage State is begun with ſuch a Perjury, 'tis no wonder to find it continu'd on at the ſame rate; that other Parts of the Vow be alſo violated, and that ſhe obſerves the *Negative* Part no more than the *Poſitive*, and as little forſake *others*, as ſhe does heartily cleave to her *Husband*. I fear this is a Conſequence of which there are too many ſad Inſtances now extant. For tho' doubtleſs there are ſome Virtues which will hold out againſt all the Temptation their Averſions can give, nay which do at laſt even conquer thoſe Averſions, and render their Duty as *eaſy* as they have kept it *ſafe*, yet we find there are but ſome that do ſo, 'tis no inſeparable Property of the *Sex*, therefore it is ſure too hazardous an Experiment for any of them to venture on.

If they may not marry upon the more generous Motive of *Obedience*, much leſs may they upon the worſe Inducements of *Avarice* and *Ambition*. For a Woman to make a Vow to the *Man*, and yet intend only to marry his *Fortune*, or his Title, is the baſeſt Inſincerity, and ſuch as in any other kind of civil *Contracts*, would not only have the *Infamy*, but the *Puniſhment* of a *Cheat*. Nor will it at all ſecure them, that in this 'tis only liable to God's *Tribunal*, for that is not like to make the Doom leſs but more heavy. In a word, Marriage is God's Ordinance, and ſhould be conſider'd as ſuch, not made a *Stale* to any unworthy Deſign; and it may well be preſum'd one Cauſe why ſo few Matches are happy,

that they are not built upon a right Foundation. Some are grounded upon Wealth, ſome on Beauty, too ſandy Bottoms, God knows, to raiſe any laſting Felicity on; while in the Interim, Virtue and Piety, the only ſolid Baſes for that Superſtructure, are ſcarce ever conſider'd. Thus God is commonly left out of the Conſultation. The *Lawyers* are reſorted to, to ſecure their Settlements; all ſorts of Artificers are to make up the Equipage, but he is neither advis'd with as to the Motives, nor ſcarce ever ſupplicated as to the Event of Wedding; indeed 'tis a deplorable Sight, to ſee with what Lightneſs and Unconcernedneſs young People go to this weightieſt *Concern* of their Lives, that a Marriage-day is but a kind of a *Bacchanal*, a more licens'd avow'd *Revel*: When, if they duly conſider it, 'tis the Hinge upon which the future Life moves, which turns them ever to a happy or miſerable Being, and therefore ought to be enter'd upon with the greateſt Seriouſneſs and Devotion. Our *Church* adviſes excellently in the Preface of *Matrimony*, and I wiſh they would not only give it the Hearing at that time, but make it their Study a good while, and do the ſame by the Marriage Vow too, which is ſo ſtrict and awful a Bond, that methinks they had need well weigh every branch of it ere they enter into it, and by the ferventeſt Prayers implore that God who is the Witneſs to be their Aſſiſtant too in its Performance.

The *WIFE.*

I Have, under the foregoing *Head*, conſider'd the young *Lady* in the capacity of a *Daughter*; the next Conſideration ſhe comes under, is that of a *Wife*. A Condition which is no more without its Duties than the other; and that too with reſpect to its *Subjection* to the *Husband*, as the *Duty* of the *Child* has reſpect to its Subjection to the Parent.

It is impoſſible for any Company of People to ſubſiſt any while together, without a Subordination of one to the other; where all will Command, none will Obey, and then there will be nothing done but Miſchief. We ſee when People meet, who have no Pretenſions one upon another, they are fain to agree among themſelves, to allow a Preference, and ſome kind of Superiority to ſome of the Company, that Buſineſs may be done. They govern themſelves either by known Eſtabliſh'd Rules and Cuſtoms of Honour and Ceremony, or elſe they conſider Age, Capacity, or Experience. Something or other there is that determines their Choice, becauſe they find it abſolutely neceſſary to ſilence the Pretences of every Man, by preferring ſome or other, that they may obtain the End of their aſſembling. Even among Friends and Equals, where the leaſt Pretence to Preeminence would diſſolve the Friendſhip, and break off all the Intercourſe, yet is there a Neceſſity that one ſhould yield it to the other, and ſo they do to make the Converſation uſeful; and the longer People are to live together, the greater is the Neceſſity of *Subordination* and *Subjection* one to another, becauſe there will unavoidably riſe ſtill more and more Occaſions of Diviſion and Difference, which will require the greater *Unity*. Now there

there can be no ſuch thing as *Unity* where two Parties command, or pretend to Superiority, or ſuch Equality as will not yield. All this is evident in Kingdoms, Provinces, Cities, and private Corporations, either great or little; and this ſhould help to convince the Wives, who are now going to make up a Family, that there is an abſolute Neceſſity of Government, which ſuppoſes *Subjection* ſomwhere or other. They muſt needs ſee that every Family, the Original indeed and Model of Bodies Corporate, Cities and Commonwealths, muſt have its proper Superior, whom all the reſt muſt needs obey.

And when they are convinc'd of this great Article, the next Enquiry is to be, whether the Superiority that is ſo unavoidably neceſſary to the Support of *Rule* and *Order*, is well and rightly plac'd in *Husbands* rather than in *Wives*; and for this they are to conſider where Nature has deſign'd this Sovereignty, where Uſe and Cuſtom have plac'd it, and what the Laws of God ſay to the Matter.

We may very well preſume that Nature has deſign'd the Sovereignty where ſhe has given the greateſt Strength and Abilities, where ſhe has made the Body and the Mind fitteſt to undergo the Toils and Labours that are abſolutely neceſſary to the Being and Well-being of the World, to the carrying on Buſineſs at home and Trade abroad, to the defending ones Country from foreign Foes, and to the adminiſtring Juſtice one to another. Now where we perceive Nature has beſt qualify'd her Creatures for Performance of theſe Functions, which are ſo neceſſary, that the World cannot ſubſiſt in any Degree, Peace, or Order without them, we may very ſafely conclude, ſhe deſign'd to place this Superiority. Whether Women have natural Strength and Ability of Body or Mind to go through theſe Things, if Men ſhould for a while neglect them, need not be queſtion'd; it is demonſtrably certain, that they have not; and if they have not, who ſhou'd do them but Men, whom Nature

Nature has fitted for it? And in as much as Nature has made Men neceſſary for theſe Works, ſhe has made them ſuperior to ſuch as are not able to do them; for where People are in other Reſpects equal, Strength of Body and Capacity of Mind doubtleſs make them ſuperior: We find it ſo in all the Creatures of the World beſides; and tho' there are a great many Inſtances of the contrary, yet they will never avail to the overthrowing the viſible Deſign of Nature. Tho' there be many Women ſuperior to many Men in Strength of Body and Abilities of Mind; in Fineneſs of Parts, Greatneſs of Capacity, Soundneſs of Judgment, Strength and Faithfulneſs of Memory; yet the Number of ſuch, neither is, nor ever was, nor will be great enough, to ſhew that Nature intended to give that Sex the Superiority over the Men. And tho' Uſe and Education might make ſome Alteration in the Caſe, yet all the Uſe and Education in the World would never fit them for the Performances of the great Buſineſſes above-mentioned, of Trade and Merchandiſe, and make Wars abroad, and executing Juſtice at home; the Abilities of managing which, are evident Indications of Nature's intending to make the Men ſuperior to the Women.

And agreeable to this manifeſt Deſign of Nature, have been the Uſages and Cuſtoms of all Countries at all Times. Theſe indeed have been ſo little to the Advantage of the weaker Sex, that without all Doubt they have done it manifeſt Injury, and have not had ſo great Regard to it as in all Reaſon and Senſe they ought to have had: So far have they been from allowing Women any Pretenſions to Priority, that they have plac'd them but a little above their Slaves or menial Servants, contrary to Reaſon and Decency, and the Deſign of Nature, which intended them for Friends and Companions in all their Fortunes. Even the Nations that have been accounted wiſeſt and moſt civiliz'd, have yet allow'd them to be only made for the Solace of Mankind, the Care of ſome Domeſtick Matters, and the Continuance

of

of the World, and wou'd let them bear no other Part in it. For which Reaſon the Searches after the Uſages and Cuſtoms of all Times will be but ſhort, and do them little Service.

We muſt therefore inquire what help Religion and the Laws of God, the Sanctuary of all the Weak, which provides Security againſt Oppreſſion and Injuſtice, afford them. When it is ſaid in Scripture, the Woman's *Deſire ſhall be to her Husband*; it ſignifies, to be ſubject to his Will. She ſhall not be Miſtreſs of herſelf, nor have any Deſire ſatisfy'd but what is approved of her Husband. She ſhall be wholly under his *Power* and *Tutelage*. *Wives ſubmit yourſelves unto your own Husbands, as it is fit in the Lord*, ſays the Apoſtle; and again, *Wives ſubmit yourſelves unto your own Husbands, as unto the Lord; for the Husband is the Head of the Wife, as Chriſt is the Head of the Church:* Which Texts, and ſeveral others indeed, plainly determine their *Subjection:* But, becauſe to be ſubject is a Phraſe of indefinite and uncertain Senſe, ſince all Inferiors are commanded to be ſubject to the higher Powers, and Children to their Parents, it will be needful for them to know in what Particulars the Wives muſt be in Subjection to their Husbands; for a Subject cannot obey his King, nor a Son his Father, nor a Servant his Maſter in all things, but each Superior has his proper and peculiar Sway, and each Inferior has a limited *Subjection*. There is ſomewhat that ſets out the Bounds of every one's Power, and every one's Obedience, and the Tranſgreſſors of them become on one ſide *Tyrants* and *Uſurpers*, and on the other ſide diſobedient *Rebels*. 'Tis thus with Wives and *Husbands*, the one may exerciſe a Power that belongs not to them, and the other refuſe *Submiſſion* where it is due, and ſhould be paid. It is certain then, that a *Wife* owes no *Subjection* to her *Husband*, againſt the Laws of either God or Man. Religion and good Morals claim the firſt Place in her *Obedience*; and tho', I think, the Laws, or rather Cuſtoms of the Land, are very tender to Women offending

offending in the Company of their *Husbands*, as preſuming them under Command, and ſome kind of Conſtraint from them; yet *Religion* has no ſuch Conſideration, but includes them all under Sin, who commit any ſinful Actions, and no Command or Example of a *Husband* will excuſe a *Wife* offending againſt a known Law of God, or doing any thing immoral. She owes him no *Subjection* in ſuch Matters. He is himſelf a *Rebel* to their common Lord and Maſter, while commanding any ſuch unlawful Actions. But in other indifferent Matters their *Diſobedience* will be faulty; where Reaſon and Diſcretion, allow'd of Cuſtom, Decency and good Fame will not make the Excuſe. Where Mens Commands are evidently unreaſonable, indiſcreet, ſhameful, unuſual, and unheard-of, infamous or unbecoming their Age, their Credit, Quality, and Condition, they may be ſafely paſt by, omitted, rather than neglected or deſpis'd. And becauſe it will be ask'd who ſhall be Judges in ſuch Caſe? The *Wives* muſt take good care, that the Commands which they comply not with, may be ſuch as will juſtify them to any wiſe impartial People; that whoever will be Judges, they may reaſonably excuſe their Non-compliance, and condemn the Men that gave ſuch Orders.

It will not be enough for *Wives* to oppoſe their Wills to the Wills of their *Husbands*, nor Reaſons to Reaſons, unleſs apparently unequal, becauſe in both theſe Caſes they do evidently contend for *Maſtery*. For if the Will and Reaſon of the one be equal to the other's, it is ſomething beſides that muſt determine who ſhall yield, and then we muſt recur to what has been before ſaid to know who is Superior.

The Truth of it is, thoſe who ought moſt to conſider theſe Things, never trouble their Heads about them; ſo far from inquiring where and when they muſt *obey*, and in what Caſes they are at Liberty, that they live as if they were always at Liberty, and never at all in Subjection, tho' in the moſt reaſonable Caſes forgetting their *Duty* and *Sex* together. They conſider not *Subjection* and

Submiſſion

Submiſſion in theſe Inſtances, as concern'd in Religion and Conſcience, behaving themſelves as if they were not commanded by God to be *obedient* to their *Husbands*, as certainly as Subjects are commanded *Obedience* to their *Princes*, *Children* to their *Parents*, and *Servants* to their *Maſters*. Subjection in all theſe is a religious Duty, and relates to Conſcience, thoſe concern'd being oblig'd by the Laws of God; and why the being in Subjection to their *Husbands*, ſhou'd not concern the Conſciences of Wives as much, is what they will never be able to account for.

Subjection, in this Place and Argument, does not only ſignify bare Submiſſion to the Will and Pleaſure of *Husbands*, but includes alſo other Qualifications, ſuch as may make them acceptable both to God and Men, which Qualifications are alſo to be conſider'd when we are treating of the Duty of *Wives*. Of theſe a chaſte Converſation is one of the Principal. A *Converſation coupled with Fear*. By which is underſtood the whole courſe and way of living; all the exterior Management and Behaviour. Wherefore a chaſte Converſation requires not only the *Purity* and *Cleanneſs* of the Heart, but ſuch an outward, innocent and decent Carriage, as may denote that inward Purity. It is what the *Husband* may ſee, becauſe he is to be won by it and gain'd over; and 'tis ſaid to be *coupled with Fear*, becauſe the Fear of God is the ſureſt Preſervation of *Chaſtity* in the Heart; and the Fear of Man, of Laws, of Infamy, Shame, and ill Report, the great Security of a chaſte and honourable Converſation without. There is no need of ſaying much in Commendation of this great Virtue to *Wives*. They cannot chooſe but know that without it they are Wives no longer. The Bond of *Wedlock* is immediately diſſolv'd before God, and before Man as ſoon as the *Husband* pleaſes to ask the Aſſiſtance of the *Law*. But this is not without the Breach of the moſt ſolemn and tremendous *Vow* and Promiſe which can be thought of. The Guilt of ſuch a *Perjury* as cannot be aton'd for in this World, and of ſuch horrible Injuſtice as can never be repair'd either

either to *Husbands* or *Children*. In other Caſes, a *Perjury* may take away a Man's good Name or his Eſtate, but there may be ſome amends made him for both of them. By Repentance his good Name may be recovered, and by a Recantation and Denial of what was ſworn to his Prejudice, his Eſtate may come again by force of Law or voluntary Surrender. If the Life of a *Father* be taken away by *Perjury* and *Injuſtice*, ſome Compenſation may be after made to his unhappy Children: But the *Perjury* and *Injuſtice* of an adulterous Wife, are ſuch Offences as can receive no Reparation or Amends. Even a Confeſſion of their Crime to the Injur'd Party may make him more miſerable, and do him farther Injury, and as for Satisfaction 'tis not in their Power. How ſtrangely hard is it for ſuch to make a good and true Repentance, how long and bitter ſhou'd their Sorrow be before God, ſince they have ſo diſabled themſelves from doing any thing beſides? Sure by their flexible and tender Conſtitution, we may conclude, no People in the World can ſin with ſuch a ſenſible and painful Self-conviction as falſe *Wives*; therefore there is the leſs need of enlarging any farther on this Inſtance of Subjection to *Husbands*. The Matter is ſo plain and reaſonable, ſo juſt and honeſt, that they who will not be *ſubject* in this Point, will not, need not, I think, regard the being ſo in any other.

But it is not refraining from an adulterous Practice only, that is enough to denominate a *Converſation* chaſte. The outward Carriage muſt be alſo honeſt and inoffenſive, void of Suſpicion as well as Blame, and this it will be if it be *coupled with Fear*, that is, a tender Regard of *Reputation* and good Fame, as well as fear of offending the *Husband*. They muſt provide things honeſt, not only in the Sight of the Lord, but in the Sight of Men: The Scriptures do not only call on People to ſecure their Hearts to God, but are exceeding careful to urge them to ſet forth a good Example, and by their good Works to *glorify their Father which is in Heaven*: They

muſt

muſt be approv'd of by Men, as well as acceptable to God. St. *Peter* admoniſhes Chriſtians to have their Converſation honeſt among the Gentiles that they might *by their good Works, which they ſhould behold, glorify God in the day of Viſitation.* So in other Places we are to *adorn the Doctrine of our Saviour in all things. To have our Converſation worthy of the Goſpel, and to walk worthy of the Vocation wherewith we are called and as becometh Saints. To give no Offence in any thing, that the Miniſtry be not blamed. Let Women be diſcreet, chaſte, Keepers at home, good and obedient to their Husbands, that the Word of God be not blaſphemed.* And again, *I will that younger Women marry and keep the Houſe, give no occaſion to the Adverſary,* that is, to any Enemies of the *Chriſtian* Religion, to reproach it, as tho' after all its good Leſſons in all reſpects, Men liv'd no better than they did before, nor the Women made better Wives than they did before they were converted, which would be much to the Diſgrace of *Chriſtianity.* Thus it is not enough for a Woman to be inwardly virtuous and good, ſhe muſt alſo appear ſo; becauſe a good Example is of great Uſe not only to ſilence the Reproaches, Obloquies, and Blaſphemies, or Evil-ſpeaking of fooliſh, ignorant, or malicious People, who for appearing Miſcarriages in Management are ready to charge Religion as a uſeleſs inſignificant Thing, but for the good Effect and Influence it has upon all that take notice of it: For as a bad Example turns to the Diſcredit and Reproach of our Profeſſion, ſo does a good one to its Honour and Advantage, and gains inſenſibly upon the moſt obdurate Minds.

When St. *Peter* has done with his general Exhortation to the Wives to adorn themſelves with good Qualities, and in particular *with a meek and quiet Spirit,* he afterwards enforces his Advice with telling them, that after *this manner in the old Time the holy Women, who truſted in God, adorn'd themſelves, being in Subjection to their own Husbands, even as* Sarah *obey'd* Abraham, *calling him Lord.* From whence we may reaſonably enough conclude, that

a

a *meek* and *quiet Spirit* will eaſily infer the being in *Subjection* to their *Husbands*, the obeying them in things reaſonable, and the uſing civil and reſpectful Terms to them, as *Sarah* indeed their great Example did to *Abraham*; and *Sarah* indeed had upon ſeveral Accounts occaſion to exerciſe a great deal of Patience and Submiſſion. She was to leave her native Country and Relations, and follow her Husband to a ſtrange Land. It did not appear to be his Intereſt, and by a contentious conceited Woman might eaſily have been judg'd an unreaſonable Humour, and an unaccountable Extravagance, not to be comply'd with: To leave a Place where they were eaſy, and in great Proſperity, to go ſhe knew not whither, upon pretence of ſhe knew not what divine Appearance, Dream or Viſion, for ſhe had only *Abraham*'s Word to warrant it. When People are not diſpos'd to ſuch Submiſſion as becomes them to the *Will* of their *Superiors*, they are full of *Scruples* and *Objections*, and making Arguments of every thing; while they who underſtand and are reſolv'd to do their Duty, obey without Diſpute, and comply with Calmneſs and great Readineſs even under Doubt, Suſpicion, and Uncertainty of what will follow.

There may be many Caſes, where a nice and curious Search after Cauſes and Reaſons for ſuch Proceedings may not be half ſo uſeful, commendable, and convenient, as an implicit Truſt and ready Compliance. No doubt but *Sarah* had this Confidence in *Abraham*, and therefore readily forſook her Country, her Kindred, and her Father's Houſe, to follow him into a Land God was to ſhew him. Another Inſtance of her mighty Patience and Submiſſion was the yielding up her only Son to the Diſpoſal of his Father, who was commanded and reſolved to offer him up a Sacrifice: 'Tis true ſhe did not yield him without the greateſt Sorrow and Reluctance; but notwithſtanding all, ſhe did yield him, the Child of ſo many Promiſes on God's Part, and ſo much Expectation and Deſire on hers, and the only Child of her old Age, who muſt needs be dear to her beyond Expreſſion:

And

And where is the Mother in the World, that would believe her Husband had receiv'd ſo hard and ſtrange a Command from God as to offer up an innocent and only Son, or that would yield it to him, were ſhe ſo perſuaded? *Abraham* indeed accounted God was able to raiſe him up even from the *Dead*, and therefore might offer him up with more Content and leſs Reluctance, becauſe he knew that *God had promiſed that in* Iſaac *ſhould his Seed be called*, and *Iſaac* muſt be rais'd again tho' from the Dead, to make the Promiſe good; but whether this was *Sarah*'s Faith does not appear. Her Heart moſt probably, was not ſupported by ſuch Hope, but left to ſtruggle with thoſe Difficulties that tender *Mothers* only can be ſenſible of on ſuch Occaſions.

The inſolent Behaviour of her *Maid* under the Favour of her *Husband*, might have afforded her another Opportunity of exerciſing her Patience, and ſhewing a *meek and quiet Spirit*, but ſhe was not quite ſo exemplary there: She us'd her cruelly and barbarouſly, and drave her to extremity; which was not of a piece with that unuſual Part that ſhe had play'd in offering up her *Servant* to her *Husband*'s Bed.

Some of the ancient *Chriſtians*, and of the moſt conſiderable, were of Opinion that it was utterly unlawful for a Woman to cohabit with her Husband after he had been notoriouſly falſe. It is ſaid in the *Moſaical* Law, that *if a Man put away his Wife, he may not take her again after ſhe is defil'd*; and if this Reaſon holds good, it will follow as well, that if ſhe had committed Adultery, ſhe may not be entertained; becauſe in this Caſe ſhe is much more defiled than one divorced is by a ſecond Marriage. But it is to be obſerved, that when it pleaſed God to give a Reaſon for his Commands, the Commands oblige, no farther than the Reaſon of them, any other People beſide thoſe to whom the Commands are particularly given. This Command would have obliged the *Jews*, without the Reaſon annext to it: But this Command obliges no one elſe, any farther than this Reaſon will

oblige

oblige them, which is very little or nothing. It is very viſible that the Reaſon obliges no one without Command, and therefore only thoſe to whom the Command is given, and the *Jews* alone were ty'd by it. But neither is it the ſame Caſe for a Man to keep a falſe Adultereſs without ever parting from her, and to take her to Wife again after ſhe has been once divorc'd, and marry'd to another, from whom ſhe is again freed either by Death or by Divorce. Neither is that Inference good, that a Man muſt not live and cohabit with an adulterous Wife, becauſe ſhe was adjudg'd by the Law to be *ſton'd to death*; for tho' ſhe were legally convicted of Adultery, ſhe was to die, yet her Husband was not oblig'd to proſecute her, or to accuſe her: he was at Liberty to conceal her Shame, and to forgive her Treſpaſs, if he pleas'd, or he might put her away privately, as *Joſeph* intended to do with the moſt pure and ſpotleſs Virgin Mother of *Jeſus*. As for the Folly, Scandal, or Indecency of ſo cohabiting together, that may make it accidentally unlawful to live ſo; but there is no divine Command, nor any natural Turpitude or Uncleanneſs in it, that may ſhew it unlawful for the faithful and innocent Party ſtill to continue with the falſe and guilty one. It muſt needs be lawful for the Innocent and Injur'd to be patient and forgive, to love and live with, if they can or will, thoſe that have wrong'd them; and if this be true of Men with reſpect to faithleſs Women, 'tis certainly true of Women with reſpect to falſe, adulterous Husbands. They are undoubtedly at Liberty, by the Laws of God, to live and cohabit with them; but as they are at Liberty to do this if they will, ſo they are at Liberty, by the Reaſon of God's Law, to forbear all Commerce with them: The Band that ty'd them is diſſolv'd and broken, and the *Husband* without her Conſent, has in that kind no farther Right to her. The innocent Wife is neither bound to forſake her adulterous Husband, nor bound to continue with him: He has ſet her free, and ſhe is at Liberty to do as ſhe will; but yet this Liberty is neither to

be

be humourſom nor laſting. If ſhe again cohabit with her Husband, and live with him as ſhe is wont, ſhe is preſum'd to have forgiven his *Sin*, and to have agreed with him. His former Treſpaſs will not be a juſt Occaſion for her leaving him when ſhe thinks fit; but new Tranſgreſſions give her new Liberty. She may endure his Falſhood as long as ſhe pleaſes, but ſhe is not oblig'd to endure it for ever. Here therefore is room for her *Religion* and *Diſcretion* to ſhew themſelves. She is undoubtedly obliged to procure the Converſion of her Husband from his evil Ways, by all the Methods ſhe can take, likely and apt to compaſs it: But ſhe is not oblig'd to hurt herſelf for his ſake. If by her ſoft and gentle Admonition, or if by ſharp and quick Reproaches, ſhe can bring him to a Senſe of his Ungrateful and Injurious Uſage, and occaſion his Repentance and Amendment, they will be either of them well beſtow'd, and ſhe will be oblig'd to try them. If it be probable that the Reproofs of wiſe and ſober People, either Miniſters or Relations, will prevail to his Converſion, ſhe muſt endeavour it with all the Secrecy and Tenderneſs imaginable. She muſt not ſuffer Sin when ſhe can eaſily remove it, and Love and true Concern will make her very diligent, and very willing to effect ſo good a Work; but if ſhe be probably aſſur'd that he is of ſo churliſh a Humour that he cannot be ſpoken to, and that the very Diſcourſe of his Folly will make him impudent, ſhameleſs, and harden him in his *Sin*, or if it will in all likelihood provoke him to uſe her cruelly, as ſome Men of brutal *Tempers* are inclin'd to do, and cauſe her to live unhappily the reſt of her time with him, ſhe is not in that Caſe oblig'd to endeavour to reclaim him, for no Man is preſum'd ſo ignorant of his *Duty*, as not to know he muſt not violate the *Marriage* Bed. And there is no need therefore of her teaching him that, ſince it is the Hope alone of reclaiming a wandering *Husband* which can make ſuch an Attempt reaſonable and convenient, and ſince ſuch Hope is vain in the Caſes before ſuppoſed,

there

there lies no Obligation in the *Woman* to attempt it. She is then at liberty to conſult her Peace and Quiet, her Eaſe and Happineſs in the beſt manner ſhe can think on. If ſhe take care that her Connivance, or diſſembled Ignorance, her Compliance and Cohabitation, her Silence or her Patience and Submiſſion, give no Countenance nor Encouragement to her unkind and wicked Partner to continue on, and proſecute his unlawful Love, ſhe is without Blame. She is not oblig'd to make herſelf miſerable by an Act of her own, but to live as eaſily as ſhe can in that Condition.

The Connivance of a *Wife* at the ſtolen Pleaſures of her *Husband*, will hardly be look'd upon as a countenancing the *Sin*, or any other than an Act of ſtrong *Neceſſity* to avoid ſome greater *Evil*. The Preſumption will be always on Womens Side, that they will never eaſily endure a *Rival* in the Affection of their *Husbands*, if they could remove her. In a word, a *Wife* may very innocently permit what ſhe cannot prevent, and by ſuch Permiſſion keep Poſſeſſion of her Rights, and defend herſelf from Wrongs; ſhe may endure her *Husband*'s open Falſhoods and Adultery, without any *Sin* or Blame on her Part, if ſhe cannot hinder him, and by this Sufferance and Compliance, not conſenting or agreeing to his *Sin*, may lawfully enjoy all the Eaſe and Advantage ſuch a Cohabitation can afford her, and avoid all the Miſchiefs and Afflictions that would attend and follow a Separation. Neither *Religion* nor *Diſcretion* prohibit an innocent and virtuous *Woman*, the living with a falſe and wicked *Husband*. And when the Women find themſelves in ſuch Condition, that Separation would undo them quite, or make them at leaſt extremely miſerable, which is the Caſe of moſt, as they have truly all the need imaginable of a *meek* and *quiet Spirit*, ſo nothing in the World can ſtand them in better ſtead: When Injuries ſo quick as this, and Provocations of this nature fall upon a violent and haſty Diſpoſition, they generally make an Everlaſting Breach, cut off all Hope of Reconcilement, and

ſtop the way ſometimes to true Repentance, which mild and prudent Management might have effected. Nothing ſo wins upon the Obſtinate, and melts the moſt obdurate Minds, like ſoft and gentle Uſage. Even Silence, when it ſhews Submiſſion and not Sullenneſs, is apter to perſuade, than angry Arguments produc'd in Oppoſition. All Men love Power and Superiority, and a *meek and quiet Spirit* ſeems to yield to them, even when it takes it from them. Diſpute begets Diſpute, and Oppoſition Oppoſition; but Silence and Submiſſion vanquiſh without Fighting or Reſiſtance. There is an unaccountable Force in Meekneſs, Patience, and Forbearance. They cut off all Reply, remove all Matter of Contention, and leave Men to conſider with themſelves the Injuries they have done. They excite in them a Senſe of Shame, and Gratitude, and Honour, and furniſh them with all the Arguments that can be thought upon, and urge them in the favour of the Innocent. There is nothing, in a word, ſo likely to prevail upon a falſe *Husband*, as a *meek and quiet Spirit*, a patient and diſcreet *Submiſſion* under thoſe heavy *Injuries*; and if it is ſo likely to ſucceed in this great Matter, it will certainly be of vaſt uſe in all the leſs Concerns of Life. There is no living for a *Wife* without a tolerable Portion of this *meek and quiet Spirit*. The *Folly* and the *Wickedneſs* of *Men*, and the perverſe unlucky Accidents that are ſo frequent in the courſe of Affairs, do furniſh ſo many Occaſions for the Exerciſe of *Patience* and *Submiſſion*, that ſhe can never think to live with any *Peace* or *Comfort*, who will not prepare herſelf againſt them.

The Example of *Sarah* in calling her Husband *Lord*, is made uſe of by St. *Peter*, to teach *Women* to profeſs their *Subjection*, and acknowledge the *Superiority* of their *Husbands*. The uſing civil and reſpectful Terms is what becomes all People, and *Wives* eſpecially; but what they are, depends upon *Cuſtom* and *Agreement*, and of themſelves they are of little Value, where *Love* and true *Reſpect* do not produce them. They are only decent and of

good

good Example. But becauſe *Anger* and *Impatience* do uſually occaſion hard Terms, and unbecoming Language, a Woman's giving her Husband ſoft reſpectful Titles may intimate her to be of a *meek and quiet Spirit*, which keeps People within the Bounds of *Decency*, and always gives good Words. To diſpoſe *Women* to get this *meek and quiet Spirit*, the Apoſtle ſays, it is an *Ornament*. Now *Ornaments* are deſign'd to ſet the *Wearers* off to Advantage, and recommend them to the Favour and Eſteem of ſuch as ſee them. It is ſomething that becomes them in the Judgment of other People, and in all theſe Senſes a *meek and quiet Spirit* is a great *Ornament* to *Wives*, it ſets them off to the beſt Advantage, and recommends them to the Favour and Eſteem of all that know them, and converſe with them, and does moſt ſenſibly engage the Affections of their *Husbands*. It is that which becomes them in the Opinion of all Wiſe, Good, and Virtuous People. It is truly a Beauty of the *Mind*, and pleaſes all that ſee it.

'Tis often ſeen, that all the Things which *Wives* intend for *Ornaments* are ill-plac'd, and give them neither *Grace* nor *Comelineſs*, whether they be of *Gold* or *Silver*, or *Embroideries*, or other things, never ſo rare and coſtly; whereas this good and gentle Temper, this *meek and quiet Spirit*, never fails of gaining *Favour* and *Acceptance*. It pleaſes People when they are Wiſe, Sober, Grave, Thoughtful, and conſider beſt; it captivates the Judgment; whereas the reſt depend upon a light and giddy Fancy.

To crown all, it is in *the Sight of God of great Price*. 'Tis *Coſtlineſs*, it ſeems, that makes all outward *Ornaments* eſteem'd and valu'd. And if they are of *great Price*, *Women* think they are more becoming, and find themſelves the more reſpected for them. By a train of idle Conſequences People come to make theſe vain Concluſions, and 'tis better to yield them, than diſpute them. The *Apoſtle* ſeems inclin'd to make good uſe of ſuch a *Fancy*, and hopes to recommend *a meek and quiet Spirit*,

by telling them that it is of *great Price*, highly eſteem'd by God; and certainly he is the wiſeſt and fitteſt Judge of what is proper and becoming all his Creatures; and if his Creatures underſtand their Intereſt, they will of all things endeavour to recommend themſelves to his Favour and Eſteem. The *Beauty* and *Comelineſs*, that all the Coſt and *Ornaments* in Nature can afford, are of no Value when the Show is over. There has been a great Noiſe and Hurry, Trouble, and great Confuſion to little Purpoſe: The Pleaſure reſults from the Gaze and Talk of the Idle and Wanton, whom they ſhall hardly ſee again, who *half* of them perhaps diſlike what the other *half* approve and praiſe; and if a Fit of *Sickneſs* comes, or a few *Years* ſteal on their *Heads*, then all the reſt are loſt. The Praiſe of *Men* on ſuch Accounts, is but a poor Temptation and Reward for ſuch Solicitude and Care as many of that *Sex* beſtow on outward *Ornaments:* Half of that Concern laid out in recommending themſelves to God by Virtues and good Qualities, would do it moſt effectually, and keep them for ever in his Favour. To be *meek and quiet* under *Injuries* and hard Uſage, that is not otherwiſe to be avoided or removed, is acting with *Reaſon*, 'tis making the beſt of a bad Buſineſs, endeavouring to be eaſy under their Sufferings. 'Tis doing what People would wiſh to do, even when they find they cannot; for all *Afflictions*, as we have ſeen before, are more or leſs *Afflicting*, as the *Mind* is more or leſs prepar'd to bear them. And therefore Injuries, Croſſes, and hard Uſage are not ſo oppreſſive to *meek and quiet Spirits*, as they are to violent and furious *Tempers*. On this account, it is the wiſeſt and moſt reaſonable thing that *Women* or *Men* can do, to be as calm and gentle as they can, to break the Force of their Misfortunes by Patience and Submiſſion. *Wild Birds* beat themſelves almoſt to pieces in the ſame *Cage* where *Tame ones* ſit and ſing: The *Priſon* is yet the ſame: One is as near *Liberty* as the other. The *Wives* that have the hardeſt Fortunes ſeldom mend it by *Contention*, *Clamour*, and *Impatience*. They often lay new Miſeries upon themſelves, by

by ſuch a Miſmanagement; whereas a gentle ſoft Forbearance gives at leaſt no *new* Provocation to farther ill Uſage, and bears the *Old* with leſs Difficulty. It is the Wiſdom of every *Wife* to get this *meek and quiet Spirit*, in order to her Eaſe and Happineſs, and upon that ſcore, it is alſo commanded them by God; for God deſigning nothing but the *Happineſs* of his *Creatures*, commands them every thing that may procure it, and every thing that he commands has certainly ſome Tendency that way, and would, if rightly purſu'd, conduce to it. As the Affairs of this World are manag'd, and as *Men* govern themſelves, there will be ſo many accidental and deſign'd Provocations to Anger and Impatience, that People would be extremely miſerable, if God did not injoin them by all Means to fit their Minds againſt them, to bear them *quietly* and *meekly* when they come, and therefore 'tis in kindneſs to us that he lays theſe *Laws* and Commands upon us; and becauſe he is delighted in our Benefit, Eaſe, and Happineſs, therefore he is delighted with our Compliance and Obedience, and a *meek and quiet Spirit is in his Sight of great Price*. But his *Goodneſs* and *Benignity* does not end here, his Aim is alſo our eternal Good. The *happier* our Obedience to his Commands makes us in this World, the *happier* it will alſo make us in the World to come. The Commands that carry their Reward with them while we obey them here, have alſo a Reward annex'd by Promiſe to them in the other Life; therefore there is ſtill the more Encouragement to ſet about our *Duty* in theſe Matters. In other Places has this ſoft and gentle Carriage of *Wives* been diſcours'd of, but it was alſo very proper to treat of it again. In this we proceed now to conſider further the *Duty* of *Fidelity* owing from *Wives* to their *Husbands*.

The *Wife* muſt not only keep herſelf pure and chaſte from all ſtrange *Embraces*, ſhe muſt not ſo much as give an ear to any that would allure her, but with the greateſt Abhorrence reject all Motions of that ſort, and never give any Man that has *once* made ſuch a Motion to

her, the leaſt Opportunity to make a *ſecond*. This is not the only *Fidelity* owing from *Wives* to *Husbands*; the *Wife* owes it alſo in the managing thoſe worldly Affairs he commits to her, ſhe muſt order them ſo as may be moſt to her *Husband*'s Advantage, and not by deceiving and cheating him employ his Goods to ſuch Uſes as he allows not of. With *Love* the *Wife* owes her Husband all *Friendlineſs* and *Kindneſs* of Converſation. She is to endeavour to bring him as much Aſſiſtance and Comfort of Life as is poſſible, that ſo ſhe may anſwer that ſpecial End of the *Woman*'s Creation, the being a *Help to her Husband*; and this in all *Conditions*, whether *Health* or *Sickneſs*, *Wealth* or *Poverty*; whatſoever Eſtate God by his Providence ſhall caſt him into, ſhe muſt be as much of *Comfort* and *Support* to him as ſhe can. To this all *Sullenneſs* and *Harſhneſs*, all *Brawling* and *Unquietneſs* are directly contrary: For that makes the *Wife* the *Burden* and *Plague* of the *Man*, inſtead of a *Help* and *Comfort*; and ſurely if it be a Fault to behave ones ſelf ſo to any Perſon, how great muſt it be to do ſo to him to whom the greateſt Kindneſs and Affection are owing?

Nor let ſuch *Wives* think, that any *Faults* or *Provocations* of the *Husband* can juſtify their *Frowardneſs*: For they will not, either in reſpect of *Religion* or *Diſcretion*: not in *Religion*, for where God has abſolutely commanded a *Duty* to be paid, 'tis not any Unworthineſs of the Perſon can excuſe from paying it: nor in *Diſcretion*, for the worſe a *Husband* is, the more need there is for the *Wife* to carry herſelf with that *Gentleneſs* and *Sweetneſs* that may be moſt likely to win him. *Likewiſe ye Wives*, ſays St. *Peter*, *be in Subjection to your own Husbands, that if any obey not the Word, they may without the Word be won by the Converſation of the Wives.* It ſeems the good behaviour of the *Wives* was thought a powerful Means to win Men from *Heatheniſm* to *Chriſtianity*, and ſure it might now-a-days have ſome good Effects, if *Women* would have but the Patience to try it. At leaſt it would have this, that it would keep ſome tolerable

Quiet

Quiet in Families; whereas on the other Side, the ill Fruits of the *Wives* Unquietneſs are ſo Notorious, that there are few *Neighbourhoods* but can give ſome Inſtance of it. How many Men are there, who to avoid the Noiſe of a froward *Wife* have fallen to Company-keeping, and by that to *Drunkenneſs*, *Poverty*, and a multitude of Miſchiefs? Let all *Wives* therefore beware of adminiſtring that Temptation. But whenever there happens any thing which in kindneſs to her *Husband* ſhe is to admoniſh him of, let it be with that *Softneſs* and *Mildneſs*, that it may appear 'tis *Love* and not *Anger* which makes her ſpeak.

As the *Wife* eſpouſes the *Man*, ſo ſhe does his *Obligations* alſo, and wherever he by Ties of *Nature* or *Alliance* owes a *Reverence* or *Kindneſs*, ſhe is no leſs a *Debtor*. Her *Marriage* is an *Adoption* into his Family, and ſhe muſt pay to every Branch of it what their Stations there do reſpectively require; to define which more particularly, would be a Work of more Length than Profit. I ſhall therefore confine myſelf to the Relation ſhe ſtands in to her *Husband*, her *Children*, and *Servants*. With reſpect to her Husband, *Love* is the firſt Debt ſhe owes him, the prime Article in the Marriage *Vow*, and indeed the moſt eſſential, and the moſt requiſite. Without this, 'tis only a *Bargain* and *Compact*: A *Tyranny* perhaps on the *Man*'s Part, and a *Slavery* on the *Woman*'s. 'Tis *Love* only that cements the *Hearts*, and where that *Union* is wanting, 'tis but a Shadow, a Carcaſe of *Marriage*. Wherefore as 'tis very neceſſary to bring ſome degree of that into this *State*, ſo 'tis no leſs to maintain and improve it in it; this is it which facilitates all other *Duties* of *Marriage*, making the *Yoke* ſit ſo lightly, that it rather *pleaſes* than *galls*. It ſhould then be the Study of *Wives* to preſerve this Flame, that like the *Veſtal* Fire it may never go out: And to that end carefully to guard it from all thoſe things which are naturally apt to extinguiſh it: Of which kind are all *Frowardneſs* and little *Perverſeneſs* of *Humour*, all *ſullen* and *moroſe* Behaviour,

which by taking off from the *Delights* and *Complacency* of *Converſation*, will by degrees wear off the *Kindneſs*.

But of all, I know nothing more dangerous than that unhappy Paſſion of *Jealouſy*, which tho' 'tis ſaid to be the *Child* of *Love*, yet like the *Viper*, its *Birth* is the certain Deſtruction of the *Parent*. As therefore they muſt be nicely careful to give their *Husbands* no *Colour*, no leaſt *Umbrage* for it, ſo ſhould they be as reſolute to reſiſt all that occurs to themſelves; be ſo far from that buſy *Curioſity*, that Induſtry to find Cauſes of Suſpicion, that even where they preſented themſelves, they ſhould avert the Conſideration, put the moſt candid Conſtruction upon any doubtful Action. And indeed *Charity* in this Inſtance has not more of the *Dove* than of the *Serpent*. It is infinitely the wiſeſt Courſe, both in relation to her preſent *Quiet*, and her future *Innocence*. The entertaining a jealous *Fancy* is admitting the moſt treacherous, the moſt diſturbing *Inmate* in the World, and ſhe opens her Breaſt to a *Fury* that lets it in. 'Tis certainly one of the moſt enchanting Frenzies imaginable, keeps her always in a moſt reſtleſs importunate Search after that which ſhe dreads and abhors to find, and makes her equally miſerable when ſhe is injur'd and when ſhe is not.

As ſhe totally loſes her *Eaſe*, ſo 'tis odds but ſhe parts alſo with ſome degrees of her *Innocence*. *Jealouſy* is commonly attended with a black Train, *Wrath*, *Anger*, *Malice*, and *Revenge*; and by how much the Female Impotence to govern theſe Paſſions is the greater, ſo much the more dangerous is it to admit that which will ſo ſurely ſet them in an Uproar. For if *Jealouſy*, as the *wiſe Man* ſays, be the *Rage of a Man*; we may well think it may be the *Fury* of a *Woman*. Indeed all Ages have given Tragical Inſtances of it; not only in the moſt indecent Fierceneſs and Clamour, but in the ſolemn Miſchiefs of actual *Revenges*. Nay, 'tis to be doubted there have been ſome whoſe *Malice* has rebounded on themſelves, who have ruin'd themſelves in Spite, have been *Adulterers*

by

by way of *Retaliation*, and taken more ſcandalous Liberties than thoſe they complained of in their *Husbands*. When ſuch enormous Effects as theſe are the Iſſues of *Jealouſy*, it ought to keep *Women* on the ſtricteſt Guard againſt it. But perhaps it may be ſaid, that ſome *Women* are not left to their Jealouſy and Conjectures, but have more demonſtrative Proofs. In this Age 'tis indeed no ſtrange thing for Men to publiſh their *Sin*, and the Offender is ſo far from concealing, that he ſometimes boaſts of his *Crime*. In this Caſe I confeſs it will be ſcarce poſſible to disbelieve him; but even here a *Wife* has this Advantage, that ſhe is out of the Pain of *Suſpence*. She knows the utmoſt, and therefore is now at leiſure to convert all that Induſtry which ſhe would have us'd for the Diſcovery, to fortify herſelf againſt a known Calamity, which ſure ſhe may do in this as well as any other. A patient Submiſſion being the univerſal Remedy in all *Diſtreſſes*, and as the *ſlighteſt* can overwhelm us if we add our own Impatience towards our ſinking, ſo the *greateſt* cannot if we deny that Aid: They are for this reaſon far in the wrong, who in caſe of this Injury purſue their *Husbands* with *Virulences* and *Reproaches*, which, as *Solomon* ſays, is the *pouring Vinegar upon Nitre*, applying *Corroſives* when *Balſams* are moſt needed, by which they not only increaſe their own *Smart*, but render the *Wound* incurable. They are not *Thunders* and *Earthquakes*, but ſoft and gentle *Rains* that cloſe the *Sciſſures* of the *Ground*; and the *Breaches* of *Wedlock* will never be cemented by *Storms* and loud *Outcries*; many Men have been made worſe, ſcarce ever any *Man* better by it, for Guilt covets nothing more than Opportunity of recriminating. And where the *Husband* can accuſe the *Wife*'s Bitterneſs, he thinks he needs no other Apology for his own *Luſt*.

A wiſe Diſſimulation, or very calm Notice, is ſure the likelieſt Means of reclaiming; for where *Men* have not wholly put off *Humanity*, there is a native Compaſſion to a meek *Sufferer*. We have naturally ſome Regret to

ſee a *Lamb* under the *Knife*, whereas the impatient roaring of a *Swine* diverts our Pity. Patience therefore is as much the *Intereſt* as it is the *Duty* of a *Wife*.

But there is another Inſtance, wherein that *Virtue* has yet a ſeverer *Trial*, and that is, when a *Wife* lies under the cauſeleſs *Jealouſies* of the *Husband*; I ſay Cauſeleſs, for if they be juſt, 'tis not ſo much a Seaſon for *Patience* as 'tis for *Repentance* and *Reformation*. This is, ſure, one of the greateſt Calamities that can befal a virtuous *Woman*, who as ſhe accounts nothing ſo dear as her *Loyalty* and *Honour*, ſo ſhe thinks no Infelicity can equal the aſperſing of them, eſpecially when it is from him to whom ſhe has been the moſt ſolicitous to approve herſelf *Faithful*. Yet God, who permits nothing but what he directs to ſome wiſe and gracious End, has an overruling Hand in all this, as well as in any other Events of Life, and therefore it becomes every *Woman* in that Condition to examine ſtrictly what ſhe has done to provoke ſo ſevere a Scourge; for tho' her Heart condemn her not of any *Falſeneſs* to her *Husband*, yet probably it may of many *Diſloyalties* to her *God*, and then ſhe is humbly to accept even of this traducing of her *Innocence*, as the *Puniſhment* of her *Iniquity*. When ſhe has made this penitent Reflexion on her *real* Guilts, ſhe may then with more Courage encounter thoſe *imaginary* Ones which are charged on her. Wherein ſhe is to uſe all prudent and regular Means for her Juſtification, that being a Debt ſhe owes to Truth, and her own Fame. But after all, if the Suſpicion remains ſtill fixt, as commonly thoſe which are the moſt *unreaſonable* are the moſt *obſtinate*, ſhe may ſtill ſolace herſelf in her *Integrity*, and God's Approbation of it; nor ought ſhe to think herſelf deſolate, who has her *Appeal* open to *Heaven*. Therefore while ſhe can look both inward and upward with Comfort, why ſhould ſhe chooſe to fix her Eyes only on the Object of her Grief? and while her own Complaint is of *Defamation*, why ſhould ſhe ſo diſhonour *God* and a good *Conſcience*, as to ſhew any thing can be more

more forcible to oppreſs than they are to *relieve* and *ſupport?* And if ſhe may not indulge to *Grief*, much leſs may ſhe to *Anger* and *Bitterneſs*. Indeed if ſhe conſiders how painful a Paſſion *Jealouſy* is, her *Husband* will more need her *Pity*, who tho' he be *unjuſt* to her, is yet cruel to himſelf. And as we do not uſe to hate and malign thoſe *Lunaticks*, who in their *Fits* beat their Friends, and cut and gaſh themſelves, but rather make it our Care to put all hurtful Engines out of their way, ſo ſhould the *Wife* not deſpitefully recriminate upon the Injury, but wiſely contrive to remove and avert the *Evil* for the future, by denying herſelf even the moſt *Innocent* Liberties, if ſhe ſee they diſſatisfy him. I know there have been ſome of another Opinion, and as if they thought *Jealouſy* were to be cur'd by *Provocation*, have in an *angry* Contempt done things to inflame it, put on an unwonted *Freedom* and *Jollity*, to ſhew their *Husbands* how little they had ſecur'd themſelves by their *Diſtruſt*: But this, as it is no *Chriſtian*, ſo I conceive it is no *prudent* Expedient. It ſerves to ſtrengthen not only the *Husband's* Suſpicion, but his *Party* too, and make many others of his Mind. And 'tis a little to be fear'd, that by uſing ſo to *brave* the *Jealouſy*, they may at laſt come to *verify* it. This *Paſſion* is moſt incident to *People* of *Quality*, and with the worſt and moſt durable Effects. Yet whatever Pretences they take hence, the Marriage *Vow* is too faſt a Knot to be looſed by *Fancies* and *Chimeras*, let a *Woman* then be the Perſon *ſuſpecting* or *ſuſpected*, neither will abſolve her from that *Love* to her *Husband* ſhe has ſworn to pay.

But alas! what Hope is there that theſe greater *Temptations* ſhall be reſiſted, when we ſee every the ſlighteſt *Diſguſt* is now-a days too ſtrong for Matrimonial *Love?* which does indeed fall off of itſelf, and is an Event ſo much expected, that 'tis no wonder to find it expire with the firſt Circuit of the *Moon*, but 'tis every body's Admiration to find it laſt one of the *Sun*, and ſometimes it vaniſhes ſo clearly as not to leave the leaſt *Shadow* behind it, not ſo much as the *Formalities* of *Marriage*. One

Bed,

Bed, one *Houſe* cannot hold them, as if they had been put together like *Caſe-Shot* in a *Gun*, only that they might the more forcibly *ſcatter* ſeveral ways. And as if this were deſign'd and intended in the firſt *Addreſſes*, a *ſeparate* Maintainance is of courſe contracted for beforehand, and becomes as ſolemn a Part of the *Settlement* as the *Jointure* is. *Plutarch* obſerves of the ancient *Romans*, that for two hundred and thirty Years after the founding of their *State*, there never was an Example of any marry'd Couple that ſeparated. It is not likely they could have a more binding Form of *Marriage* than ours is. The Difference muſt be between their *Veracity* and our *Falſeneſs*.

But even among thoſe who *deſert* not each other, too many do mutually fall from that Intireneſs of *Affection*, which is the *Soul* of *Marriage:* And to help on the *Declination*, there are faſhionable *Maxims* taken up to make *Men* and their *Wives* the greateſt *Strangers* to each other. Thus 'tis pronounced a Piece of Ill-breeding, a Sign of a *Country* Gentleman, to ſee a *Man* go abroad with his own *Wife*. I ſuppoſe thoſe that brought up theſe Rules are not to ſeek what uſe to make of them; and were the Time of the moſt modiſh *Couples* computed, 'twould be found they are but few of their waking *Hours*, I might ſay *Minutes*, together: Meer *Diſquietude* and *Intermiſſion* of Converſation, if nothing elſe, muſt needs allay, if not quite extinguiſh their *Kindneſs*. But I hope there are yet many who do not think the Authority of *Faſhion* greater than that of a *Vow*, and ſuch will ſtill look upon it as their *Duty* both to *own* and cheriſh that Kindneſs and Affection they have ſo ſolemnly promis'd.

Another *Debt* to the Perſon of the *Husband* is *Fidelity*; for as ſhe has *eſpouſed* all his *Intereſts*, ſhe is oblig'd to be true to them, to keep all his *Secrets*, to inform him of all his *Dangers*, and in a mild and gentle manner to admoniſh him of his *Faults*. This is the moſt genuine Act of *Friendſhip:* Therefore ſhe who is placed in the neareſt and moſt intimate degree of that *Relation* muſt not be wanting in it. She that lies in his *Boſom* ſhould be a

kind

kind of ſecond *Conſcience* to him, by putting him in mind both of his *Duty* and his *Errors*. 'Tis a Sin to omit it as long as ſhe can be but patiently heard, the greateſt Treachery to his nobleſt, to his immortal Part, and ſuch as the moſt Officious Cares of his other *Intereſt* can never expiate. She is indeed unfaithful to herſelf in it, there being nothing that does ſo much ſecure the *Happineſs* of the *Wife*, as the *Virtue* and *Piety* of the *Husband*; but tho' this is to have her chiefeſt Care, as being his *Principal* Intereſt, yet ſhe is to neglect none of the *Inferior*, but contribute her utmoſt to his Advantage in all his Concerns.

Of all the Particulars which have been treated of under this general Head of the Duty and Intereſt of Wives, there are two which can never be too earneſtly recommended. Firſt, Conjugal Fidelity as it relates to the Bed; this ought to be obſerved in the moſt nice and ſtrict manner. The *Wife* is in that to be ſeverely ſcrupulous, and never to admit ſo much as a Thought or Imagination, much leſs any Parley or Treaty contrary to her *Loyalty*. *Wantonneſs* is one of the fouleſt Blots that can ſtain any of the *Sex*; but 'tis infinitely more odious in the *Marry'd* than in any other *State*, it being in them an *Accumulation* of Crimes; *Perjury* added to *Uncleanneſs*; the *Infamy* of their Family ſuperſtructed upon their own. And accordingly all *Laws* have made a difference in their *Puniſhment*. *Adultery* was by God's own Award puniſh'd with *Death* among the *Jews*, and it ſeems it was ſo agreeable to natural Juſtice, that ſeveral other Nations did the like. I know no reaſon, but the difficulty of *Detection*, that ſhould any where give it a milder Sentence.

Neither, ſecondly, can we enough enlarge upon the Duty of *Obedience*, which *Wives* ought to practiſe towards their *Husbands*, becauſe it is of late become rather a matter of *Jeſt* than of *Doctrine*. The Word has a very harſh ſound in the *Ears* of ſome *Wives*, but it is certainly what all of them are bound to obſerve, not only by their Promiſe of it, tho' that were ſufficient, but from an Original

of

of much older Date, it being the *Penalty* that was laid upon the Woman's *Diſobedience* to God, that ſhe, and all derived from her, ſhould be ſubject to the Husband. The contending for *Supreiority* is an Attempt to reverſe the fundamental *Law*, which is almoſt as ancient as the World; but ſurely *God*, with whom there is no *Shadow of Change*, will not make Acts of *Repeal*, to ſatisfy the Petulancy of a few Maſterleſs *Women*. The *Statute* will ſtill ſtand in force, and if it cannot awe them into an *Obſervance*, will not fail to conſign them to *Puniſhment*. Indeed this *Fault* is commonly its own Chaſtiſer, and does anticipate, tho' not avert, its final Doom. The Imperiouſneſs of a *Woman* often raiſes thoſe *Storms*, in which herſelf is Shipwreck'd. How pleaſantly might many *Women* have lived, if they had not affected *Dominion?* How much even of their *Will* might they have had, if they had not ſtruggled for it; Let a *Man* be of never ſo gentle a Temper, unleſs his *Head* be ſofter than his *Heart*, ſuch an *Uſurpation* will awake him to aſſert his *Right*. But if he be of a ſour ſevere *Nature*, if he have as great a deſire of *Rule* as ſhe, back'd with a much better *Title*, what *Tempeſts*, what *Hurricanes* muſt two ſuch oppoſite *Winds* produce? And at laſt 'tis commonly the *Wife*'s Lot, after an uncreditable unjuſt *War*, to make as diſadvantageous a *Peace*. This, like all other ineffectual *Rebellions*, ſerving only to add weight to her *Yoke*, to turn an ingenuous *Subjection* into a ſlaviſh *Servitude*. Wherefore 'tis certainly not only the *Virtue* but the *Wiſdom* of *Wives* to do that upon *Duty*, which at laſt they muſt, with more unſupportable Circumſtances, do upon *Neceſſity*.

And as they owe theſe ſeveral *Duties* to the *Perſon* of the *Husband*, ſo there is alſo a Debt to his *Reputation*; this they are to be extremely tender of, to advance it by making all that is good in him as conſpicuous, as publick as they can, ſetting his Worth in the cleareſt *Light*, by putting his Infirmities in the *Shade*, caſting a *Veil* upon thoſe to ſkreen them from the Eyes of others, nay,

as

as far as is poſſible, from their own too; there being nothing acquir'd to the *Wife* by Contemplating the *Husband's* Weakneſs, but a Temptation of deſpiſing him, which tho' bad enough in itſelf, is yet render'd worſe by that train of miſchievous Conſequences which uſually attend it. In caſe therefore of any notable Imperfections in him, her ſafeſt way will be to *conſider* them no farther than ſhe can be Inſtrumental to the *Curing* them. To divert her Thoughts from them, and reflect upon her own, which perhaps, if impartially weigh'd, may balance, if not over-poiſe his. And indeed thoſe *Wives* who are apt to blaze their *Husbands* Faults, ſhew that they have either little conſider'd their own, or elſe find them ſo great, that they are forced to that Art of *Diverſion*, and ſeek in his *Infamy* to drown their own. But that *Project* is a little unlucky, for nothing does in ſober Judges create a greater Prejudice to a *Woman*, than to ſee her forward in impeaching her *Husband*.

Beſides this immediate Tenderneſs of his *Reputation*, there is another by way of *Reflexion*, which conſiſts in a Care that ſhe herſelf do nothing which may redound to his *Diſhonour*. There is ſo ſtrict a *Union* between a *Man* and his *Wife*, that the *Law* counts them One Perſon, and conſequently they can have no divided *Intereſt*. Thus the Mis-behaviour of the *Woman* reflects Ignominy on the *Man*. It therefore concerns them as well upon their *Husbands* as their own Account, to abſtain even from all appearance of *Evil*, and provide that themſelves be, what *Cæſar* is ſaid to have requir'd of his *Wife*, *Not only without Guilt but without Scandal alſo*.

Another part of the Wife's *Duty* relates to her *Husband's* Fortune: The management of which is not ordinarily the *Wife's* Province; but where the *Husband* thinks fit to make it ſo, ſhe is oblig'd to adminiſter it with her beſt Care and Induſtry: Not by any neglect of hers to give others opportunity of *Defrauding* him. Yet on the other hand, not by immoderate Tenacity

or

or Griping to bring upon him and herſelf the *Reproach*, and which is worſe, the *Curſe* that attends *Extraction* and *Oppreſſion*. But this is not uſually the *Wives* field of Action, tho' it were eaſy to give Inſtances from *Hiſtory* of the advantageous *Menage* and active Induſtry of *Wives*, not only in *ſingle* Families, but *whole* Nations. Nothing can be more pregnant than that among the *Romans*, in the very Height and Flouriſh of the *Empire*. *Auguſtus* himſelf ſcarce wore any thing but of the *Manufacture* of his *Wife*, his *Siſter*, *Daughter*, and *Neices*, as *Suetonius* aſſures us. Should the gay *Lilies* of our *Fields*, which neither *ſow* nor *ſpin*, nor gather into *Barns*, be exempted from *furniſhing* others, and left only to *clothe* themſelves, 'tis to be doubted they would reverſe our Saviour's *Parallel* of *Solomon*'s *Glories*, and no *Beggar* in all his *Rags* would be *array'd* like *one* of theſe.

We will be yet more kind, and impoſe only the Negative *Thrift* on the *Wife*, not to waſte and embezzle her *Husband*'s Eſtate, but to confine her Expences to ſuch limits as they can eaſily admit; a Caution which if all *Women* had obſerv'd, many *Noble* Families had been preſerv'd, of which there now remains no other *Memorial*, but that they fell a *Sacrifice* to the profuſe *Vanity* of a *Woman*; and I fear *this Age* is like to provide many more ſuch *Monuments* for the *next*. Our *Ladies*, as if they emulated the *Roman* Luxury, which *Seneca* and *Pliny* deſcribe with ſo much Indignation, ſometimes wear about them the *Revenues* of a Rich Family; and thoſe that cannot reach to that, ſhew how much 'tis againſt their *Wills* they fall lower, by the vaſt Variety and Exceſs of ſuch things as they can poſſibly compaſs; ſo much Extravagance not only in their own *Dreſs*, but that of their *Houſes* and *Apartments*, as if their *Vanity*, like the *Leproſy* we read of in *Leviticus*, *had infected the very Walls*. And indeed 'tis a very ſpreading Eating one, for the *Furniture* oft conſumes the *Houſe*. If ſome Gentlemen were to calculate their *Eſtates*, they might reduce all to the *Inventory* of *Scopias* the *Theſſalian*, who

profeſt

profeſt his All lay only in ſuch *Toys* as did him no *good*. *Women* are now skilful *Chymiſts*, and can quickly turn their *Husbands Earth* into *Gold*, but they purſue the Experiment too far, make that *Gold* too *Volatile*, and let it all *vapour* away in inſignificant tho' gaudy *Trifles*.

Nor is it ever like to be otherwiſe with thoſe that immediately affect the *Town*, that *Forge* of *Vanity*, which ſupplies a perpetual *Spring* of new Temptations. 'Tis true, there are ſome *Ladies* who are neceſſarily engaged to be there, their *Husbands* Employments or Fortunes have mark'd that out as their proper *Station*; and where the *Ground* of their ſtay is their *Duty*, there is more reaſon to hope it will not betray them to *ill*. For Temptations are moſt apt to aſſault *Stragglers*, thoſe that put themſelves out of their proper *Road*. And truly, I ſee not who can more properly be ſaid to be ſo, than thoſe *Women* whoſe Means of Subſiſtence lies in the *Country*, and yet will ſpend it no where but at *London*. Which ſeems to carry ſomething of Oppoſition to *God's* Providence, who ſurely never caus'd their *Lot* to fall in a *fair Ground*, *in goodly Heritages*, with an intent they ſhould never *inhabit* them. Where *God* gives an *Eſtate*, he as the Supreme *Landlord* affixes ſomething of *Duty*, lays a kind of *Rent-Charge* upon it. He expects it ſhould maintain both *Hoſpitality* and *Charity*, and ſure both theſe are fitteſt to be done upon the place, whence the Ability for them riſes. All Publick *Taxes* uſe to be levy'd where the *Eſtate* lies, and I know not why theſe which are God's *Aſſeſſments* upon it ſhould not be paid there too. When a Gentleman's Land becomes profitable unto him, by the Sweat and Labour of his poor Neighbours and Tenants, 'twill be a kind of *Muzzling the Ox*, if they never taſte of the *Fruit* of their *Pains*, if they ſhall never have the Refreſhment of a good *Meal* or an *Alms*; which they are not very likely to have when all the *Profits* are ſent up to maintain an *Equipage*, and keep up a *Parade* in *Town*. But alas! 'tis often not only the *Annual* Profits which go that way, not only the *Crop* but

but the *Soil* too, thoſe *Luxuries* uſually prey upon the *Vitals*, eat out the very *Heart* of an *Eſtate*, and many have ſtaid in the *Town* till they have had nothing left in the *Country* to retire to.

Now, where this proceeds from the *Wife*, what Account can ſhe give to her *Husband*, whoſe Eaſineſs and Indulgence (for that muſt be ſuppos'd in the Caſe) ſhe has ſo abus'd? As alſo to her Poſterity and Family, who for her *Pride* muſt be brought Low, reduc'd to a Condition beneath their Quality, becauſe ſhe affected to live above it? But ſhe will yet worſe anſwer it to herſelf, on whom She has brought not only the *Inconvenience*, but the *Guilt*. A Lofty Mind will ſurely feel Smart enough by a *Fall* from an exalted to an humble *Station*, from *Profuſion* to *Indigence*. What can be more Grievous to a vain and laviſh Humour! Yet here 'twill further have an additional *Sting* from *Conſcience*, that ſhe owes it only to her own *Pride* and *Folly*; a moſt imbittering Conſideration, and ſuch as advances the Affliction beyond that of a more Innocent *Poverty*, as much as the Pain of an envenom'd *Arrow* exceeds that of another.

The ſaddeſt reckoning of all is that which ſhe is to make to God, who has declar'd he hates *Robbery*, tho' for a *Burnt-Offering* to himſelf: How will he then deteſt this *Robbery*, this impoveriſhing of the *Husband*, when 'tis only to make an Oblation to *Vanity* and Exceſs? It ſhould therefore be the Care of all *Wives* to keep themſelves from a *Guilt*, for which *God* and *Man*, and themſelves alſo, ſhall equally accuſe them, and to keep their Expences within ſuch Limits, that as *Bees* ſuck but not violate or deface the *Flowers*, ſo they as joint *Proprietaries* with the *Husbands*, may *enjoy*, but not *devour* and *deſtroy* his Fortune.

We muſt not forget to obſerve that whatever is *Duty* to the *Husband*, is equally ſo, be he *good* or *ill*. 'Tis not his Defect, either of *Piety* or *Morality*, that can abſolve the *Wife*. For beſides the Inconvenience of making her

Duty

Duty precarious, and liable to be ſubſtracted upon every Pretence of Demerit, ſhe has by ſolemn Contract renounced that Liberty, and in her Marriage *Vow* taken him *for better for worſe*, and 'tis too late after *Vows* to make Enquiry. How uneaſy ſoever the Perverſeneſs of the *Husband* may render it, he cannot thereby make it leſs, but more rewardable by God. How Unworthy ſoever the *Husband* may be, the *Wife* cannot miſplace her *Obſervance*, while ſhe finally terminates it on that infinite Goodneſs and Majeſty to whom no *Love* or *Obedience* can be enough.

If a *Wife* happens to have a *Husband* that is not ſo faithful to her as he ought to be, it is not neceſſary ſhe ſhould ſeem quite inſenſible of it. That would look ſo indifferent, as if ſhe had no manner of Kindneſs for him. She may make ſome *Complaints*, but muſt take care they are not too ſharp and violent; her Endeavour ſhou'd be to bring him back to her by gentle means; and if it be his Misfortune and hers, that he ſtill perſiſts, let her manage it ſo at leaſt, that if ſhe muſt loſe his *Heart*, ſhe loſes not his *Eſteem*.

When any Miſunderſtanding ariſes between the *Husband* and the *Wife*, if ſhe be never ſo little *Handſom*, ſhe will find but too many that will ſeem concern'd for her hard Fate. Some will tell her, it is very ſurpriſing that ſuch a Perſon as ſhe is, who might make ſo many Worthy *Men* Happy, ſhou'd be ſo *ill* treated by an *Huſband*; others will cry, 'tis very ſtrange that a Man who ought to ſacrifice all for her ſake, ſhou'd prefer another before her, who does not deſerve half ſo much. Such is the Language of *Lovers:* They ſet off all their Wicked Deſigns with the plauſible Pretences of *Pity* and *Complacency*, and when every Word they ſay is to Undermine their *Virtue*, all their Appearances ſeem only intended to defend their *Merit*. They will repreſent the Unworthineſs of her *Rivals*, to exaſperate her againſt her *Husband*, for the Neglect or Indifference he ſhews her. They will complain that this plainly diſcovers the depraved

praved Appetites of *Husbands*; beſides a hundred other Stories which they are very ready to tell to *Women* that will take the Pains to hear them. After this they will fall to their *Counſels*. By degrees they inſpire them with Thoughts of *Revenge*, they repreſent to them, *They ought to let their Husbands ſee they are not Inſenſible of the Injuſtice done them, and it ſticks only at their own Doors, that they pay them not in their own Kind. That ſuch ſorts of Reprimands have ſometimes a better Effect upon them than Patience, and if the Husband will continue in his ill Courſes, he deſerves that the Wife ſhould alſo diſpenſe a little with the Fidelity which ſhe promis'd him.* Having ended their *Satire* againſt the *Rival*, they paſs on next to the Perſon of the *Husband*. They begin with ſome little Inſinuations, for fear the *Wife* ſhould take Offence. The firſt Conference is ſpent only upon the Subject of the Man's *Inconſtancy*; at the next they puſh the Matter a little farther. If he happens to have any natural *Imperfection*, they ſo contrive it as to let it ſlip in gently with the *Praiſes* which they beſtow upon the *Wife*. If ſhe does not ſeem to be much angry at it, or if ſhe feigns not to have taken notice of it, they go on. Thus far they make no *Declaration*. They only act the Part of a good *Friend*, who ſincerely intereſts himſelf in her Concerns purely for her Service. They commend her, they pity her. They propoſe ſome Diverſions, and by little and little they thus become more familiar to her, they ſeek all Occaſions to diſcourſe further with her, and by ſeeking they find. Thus it is that her great *Friend* and *Confident*, getting by degrees into her *Heart*, at length uſurps a Place which did not belong to him.

When *Diviſions* of this kind happen in a marry'd *Life*, a *Wife* muſt take great Care what Meaſures ſhe takes. For, true it is, there is nothing ſo pleaſing and natural as to have one's ſelf pity'd, when one ſuffers: However, in this Caſe, *Virtue* obliges a *Woman* to bear patiently the *Burden* herſelf, and what Cauſe ſoever ſhe has,

has, ſhe muſt never ſuffer any *Man* upon any Pretence whatſoever to ſpeak ill of her *Husband*. Her beſt way in ſuch a Conjuncture, is never to admit of any ſuch Diſcourſe: For, if ſhe commends her *Husband* when all the World knows he does not deſerve it, ſhe will paſs either for a *Fool* or a *Hypocrite*; and if ſhe complains who can help her? *Women* do not naturally love one another. Their ill Politicks put them generally at *Variance*; and what has been ſaid already ſhews the Danger of their truſting themſelves to the Compaſſion of *Men*.

Some Men are, 'tis true, incapable of attempting any thing in cool Blood againſt the *Virtue* of a marry'd *Woman*, who lies under no ſuſpected *Character*. But *Men* inſenſibly go often farther than they intended: To *Day* 'tis *Pity* only, to *Morrow* it changes its *Nature*; and when *Pity* once degenerates with them into *Love*, they dare no longer anſwer for themſelves. The ſureſt way is then to have no particular Intimacy with ſuch *Friends*. Unhappy Neceſſity, which thus obliges *Men* and *Women* to diſtruſt one another, and to put a *Bar* between two *Sexes*, which *Heav'n* ſeems to have made to be *united*.

But for all this, 'tis not pretended hereby to deprive *Ladies* of a fair Correſpondence and Converſation with ſuch *Men* of their own Condition as they may be oblig'd to entertain. No: nor is it unadviſeable to admit ſometimes even of a particular *Friend*, that may be capable of aſſiſting them with his good *Counſel*. All that is meant by what has been ſaid, is to ſhew the Care and Caution they ought to take in ſo delicate and nice a Matter. It is very hard for a *Virtue* and a *Paſſion*, which are ſituated ſo near together, long to obſerve and keep their due Diſtance. It is then very fit that their *Friend* whom they have a mind to raiſe to be a Confident, ſhou'd be of ſuch an advanc'd *Age*, and of ſuch known *Worth* and *Probity*, that they may ſafely ſee him without giving *Offenſe*, and with all Security to the *Rules* of *Decency*.

I know

I know very well that *Marriage* is made ſo ſlight a Matter, and the mutual *Duties* of *Husband* and *Wife* ſo little conſider'd, that few *Women*, as well as *Men*, among Perſons of Rank, think they are at all bound by them. But as all this proceeds from want of due Conſideration, 'twill not be improper to ſay a Word or two to the fair Sex of that *Condition*, which the *Mode* ſeems to have exalted beyond the Limits of *Divine* or *Human* Laws, as they have Relation to *Matrimony*.

What can be of more Importance to a young *Lady* of *Quality*, than to inform herſelf well as to her Conduct in a State of *Life*, to which 'tis very probable ſhe is not indifferent as ſoon as ſhe is capable of diſtinguiſhing it from that of *Virginity?* To know how to live with a *Husband* is a Knowledge that, of all others, will ſtand her in the greateſt ſtead; and *Husband* is ſo large a Word, that few *Rules* can be fix'd to it which are unchangeable, the Methods being as various as the ſeveral *Tempers* of Men, to which they muſt be ſuited; yet one muſt not omit ſome *General Obſervations*, which with the Help of their own may better direct young *Ladies* in this part of their Lives, upon which their *Happineſs* moſt depends.

It is one of the Diſadvantages belonging to their *Sex*, that young *Women* are ſeldom permitted to make their own *Choice*, eſpecially where there is a *Fortune* to go with them. Their Friends Care and Experience are taken for granted to be ſafer Guides to them than their own *Inclinations*; and their *Modeſty* often forbids them to refuſe whom their *Parents* recommend, tho' their inward Conſent may not entirely correſpond with it. In this Caſe there remains nothing for them to do, but to endeavour to make that eaſy which falls to their *Lot*, and by a wiſe Uſe of every thing they may diſlike in a *Husband*, turn that by degrees to be very *ſupportable*, which if neglected may in time beget an *Averſion*.

They muſt lay it down for a Foundation in general, that there is, as has been ſhewn at large, an *Inequality* in

in the *Sexes*, and that for the *Oeconomy* of the World, the *Men*, who were to be the *Lawgivers*, had the better ſhare of *Reaſon* beſtow'd upon them; by which means the other *Sex* is the better prepar'd for *Compliance*, which is neceſſary for the better Performance of thoſe *Duties* that ſeem moſt properly aſſign'd to it. This looks a little *Uncourtly* at the firſt Appearance, but upon Examination it will be found that *Nature* is ſo far from being *Unjuſt* to them, that ſhe is partial on their ſide. She has made *Women* ſuch large *Amends* by other Advantages for the ſeeming *Injuſtice* of the firſt Diſtribution, that the Right of *Complaining* is come over to the other *Sex*. The *Ladies* have it in their Power not only to *free* themſelves, but to *ſubdue* their *Maſters*, and without Violence throw both their *Natural* and *Legal Authority at their own Feet*. The two *Sexes* are made of differing *Tempers*, that their *Defects* may be the better mutually ſupply'd. *Women* want the Reaſon of *Men* for their *Conduct*, their *Strength* for their *Protection*; *Men* want the *Gentleneſs* of *Women* to *ſoften* and entertain them. The firſt Part of the Life of *Man* is a good deal ſubjected to the *Woman* in the *Nurſery*, where ſhe reigns without Competition, and by that means has the Advantage of giving the firſt *Impreſſions*. She has afterwards ſtronger Influences, which well manag'd have more Force on her behalf, than all the *Privileges* and *Juriſdictions Man* can pretend to have againſt her. *Women* have more Strength in their *Looks* than *Men* have in their *Laws*, and more Powers by their *Tears* than *Men* have by their *Arguments*.

'Tis true, the *Laws* of *Marriage* run in a harſher Stile towards the *Women*. *Obey* is an ungenteel Word, and leſs eaſy to be digeſted by making ſuch an unkind Diſtinction in the Words of the *Contract*, and ſo very unſuitable to the Exceſs of *Good Manners* which generally goes before it. Beſides, the *Univerſality* of the Rule ſeems to be a *Grievance*, and it appears reaſonable that there ought to be an *Exemption* for extraordinary Women from ordinary

dinary Rules, to take away the juſt Exception that lies againſt the falſe meaſure of *General Equality.*

It may be alledg'd by the *Counſel* retain'd by the *Fair Sex*, that as there is in all other *Laws* an Appeal from the *Letter* to the *Equity* in Caſes that require it, it is but reaſonable that ſome *Court* of a larger *Juriſdiction* might be erected, where ſome *Wives* might reſort and plead *ſpecially*; and in ſuch Inſtances where *Nature* is ſo kind as to raiſe them above the *Level* of their own *Sex*, they might have *Relief*, and obtain a *Mitigation* in their own *Particular*, of a *Sentence* which was given generally againſt *Woman-kind.* The Cauſes of *Separation* are now ſo very coarſe, that few are *confident* enough to buy their *Liberty* at the Price of having their Modeſty ſo expos'd. And for *Diſparity* of *Minds*, which above all other things requires a *Remedy*, the Laws have made no *Proviſion.* So little refin'd are Numbers of Men by whom they are compil'd. This and a great deal more might be ſaid to give a Colour to the Complaint, but the Anſwer to it in ſhort is, that the *Inſtitution* of *Marriage* is too ſacred to admit a *Liberty* of *objecting* to it. That the Suppoſition of *Womens* being the weaker *Sex*, having without all doubt a good Foundation, makes it reaſonable to ſubject it to the *Maſculine Dominion.* But the *Law* preſumes there would be ſo very few found in this Caſe, who would have a ſufficient Right to this Privilege, that it is ſafer ſome *Injuſtice* ſhould be *conniv'd* at in a very few Inſtances, than to break into an Eſtabliſhment, upon which the Order of Human Society does ſo much depend.

And if thoſe *Laws* were laid a little more open, out of Complaiſance to the more deſerving of the *Sex*, might not the Men demand they ſhould be ſtretcht too a little in their Favour? To give them Eaſe in Caſes where their Diſturbances ariſe purely from the *Weakneſs* and *Folly* of the *Wives*, a great part of which may be entirely owing to their *Sex:* Who are therefore to make the beſt of what is ſettled by *Law* and *Cuſtom*, and

and not vainly imagine it will be chang'd for the ſake of a few *Women* of *uncommon* Merit. But that the Ladies may not be diſcourag'd, as if they lay under the Weight of an *incurable Grievance*, they are to know that by a *wiſe* and *dextrous* Conduct, it will be in their Power to relieve themſelves from any thing that looks like a *Diſadvantage*. For the better *Direction* of thoſe who are diſpos'd to receive *Direction*, I will give a hint of the moſt ordinary *Cauſes* of *Diſſatisfaction* between *Man and Wife*, that they may be able by ſuch a *Warning* to live ſo upon their *Guard*, that when they ſhall be *marry'd*, they may know how to *cure* their Husbands *Miſtakes*, and to *prevent* their own.

Firſt then they are to conſider, they live in a Time which has render'd ſome kind of *Frailties* ſo *habitual*, that they lay Claim to large *Grains* of *Allowance*. The World in this is ſomewhat unequal, and *Man* ſeems to play the *Tyrant* in diſtinguiſhing partially for his own *Sex*, by making that in the utmoſt Degree *criminal* in the *Woman*, which in the *Man* paſſes under a much *gentler Cenſure*. The Root and the Excuſe of this *Injuſtice*, is the *Preſervation* of Families from any *Mixture* which may bring a blemiſh upon them, and while the *Point* of *Honour* continues to be ſo plac'd, it ſeems unavoidable to give the *Woman* the greater ſhare of the *Penalty*; but if in this the *Sex* lies under any *Diſadvantage*, it is more than recompenſed by having the *Honour* of *Families* in their keeping. The Conſideration ſo great a Truſt muſt give the *Wife* makes full amends, and this Power the World has lodg'd in her, can hardly fail to reſtrain the Severity of an *ill* Husband, and to improve the Kindneſs and Eſteem of a *good* one. This being ſo, let her remember, that next to the Danger of committing the *Fault* herſelf, the greateſt is that of *ſeeing* it in her *Husband*. She muſt not ſeem to look or hear that way. If he is a Man of Senſe, he will reclaim himſelf; the Folly of it is of itſelf ſufficient to cure him: If he is not ſo, he will be provok'd, but not reform'd. To expoſtulate

in theſe Caſes, looks like declaring War, and preparing Repriſals, which to a *thinking Husband* would be a dangerous Reflexion. Beſides, it is ſo coarſe a Reaſon that will be aſſign'd for a Lady's too great warmth upon ſuch an Occaſion, that *Modeſty* no leſs than *Prudence* ought to reſtrain her: Since ſuch an Indecent Complaint makes a Wife much more ridiculous than the Injury that provokes her to it. But it is yet worſe and more unskilful to *blaze* it in the World, expecting it ſhould riſe up in Arms to take her part. Whereas ſhe will find it can have no other Effect, than that ſhe will be ſerv'd up in all Companies, as the *reigning Jeſt* at that time, and will continue to be the common Entertainment, 'till ſhe is reſcu'd by ſome *newer Folly* which comes upon the Stage, and drives her away from it. The *Impertinence* of ſuch Methods is ſo plain, that it does not deſerve the pains of being laid open. Let the *Ladies* aſſure themſelves, that in theſe Caſes their *Diſcretion* and *Silence* will be the moſt *prevailing Reproof*. An *affected Ignorance*, which is ſeldom a Virtue, is a great one here. And when the *Husband* ſees how unwilling the Wife is to be uneaſy, there is no ſtronger Argument to perſuade him not to be unjuſt to her. Beſides it will naturally make him the more yielding in other things. And whether it be to cover or redeem his *Offence*, ſhe may have the good Effect of it while it laſts, and all that while have the moſt reaſonable Ground that can be, of preſuming ſuch a Behaviour will in the end entirely Convert him. There is nothing ſo glorious to a *Wife* as a Victory ſo gain'd; a Man ſo reclaim'd is for ever after ſubjected to her *Virtue*, and her bearing for a time is more than rewarded by a Triumph that will continue as long as her Life.

The next thing to be ſuppoſed is, that the *Husband* may love *Wine* more than is convenient: It will be granted, that tho' there are *Vices* of a deeper Dye, there are none that have a greater *Deformity* than this when it is not reſtrain'd; but with all this, the ſame Cuſtom, which is the more to be lamented for its being ſo general,

ſhould

ſhould make it leſs uneaſy to every one in particular, who is to ſuffer by the Effect of it. A *Woman* need not be ſurpris'd if ſhe has a *Drunkard* for her *Husband:* 'Tis no new thing, There is, by too frequent Examples, Evidence enough that ſuch a Misfortune may happen, and yet a *Wife* may live too without being Miſerable. *Self-love* dictates aggravating Words to every thing we feel. *Ruin* and *Miſery* are the Terms we apply to whatever we do not like, forgetting the Mixture allotted to us, by the Condition of Human Life by which it is not intended we ſhould be quite exempt from Trouble. It is fair if we can eſcape ſuch a Degree of it as would oppreſs us, and enjoy ſo much of the pleaſant part as may leſſen the ill *Taſte* of ſuch things as are unwelcome to us. Every thing has two ſides, and for our own Eaſe we ought to direct our Thoughts to that which may be leaſt liable to Exception. To fall upon the worſt *ſide* of a *Drunkard* gives ſo unpleaſant a Proſpect, that it is not poſſible to dwell upon it. Let us paſs then to the more *favourable Part*, as far as a *Wife* is concern'd.

I am tempted to ſay, if the Irregularities of the Expreſſion could in ſtrictneſs be juſtify'd, that a *Wife* is to thank God her *Husband* has *Faults*. Mark the ſeeming *Paradox*. A *Husband* without Faults is a dangerous Obſerver, he has an Eye ſo piercing, and ſees every thing ſo plain, that it is expos'd to his full Cenſure; and tho' one would not doubt, but the Virtue of a good *Wife* would diſappoint the ſharpeſt Enquiries, yet few *Women* can bear the having all they ſay or do, *repreſented* in the clear Glaſs of an Underſtanding without *Faults*. Nothing ſoftens the *Arrogance* of Man's *Nature* like a mixture of ſome *Frailties*; it is by them we are beſt told, we muſt not ſtrike too hard upon others, becauſe we ourſelves do ſo often deſerve Blows. They pull our Rage by the Sleeve, and whiſper *Gentleneſs* to us in our *Cenſures*, even when they are rightly apply'd. The *Faults* and *Paſſions* of *Husbands* bring them down to you, and make them content to live upon leſs unequal

Terms than *faultleſs* Men would be willing to ſtoop to. So haughty is Mankind 'till humbled by common Weakneſſes and Defects, which in our corrupted State contribute more towards the reconciling us to one another, than all the *Precepts* of the *Philoſophers* and *Divines*. Where the Errors of the *Man*'s Nature make amends for the Diſadvantages of the *Woman*'s, it is more for her part to make uſe of the *Benefits*, than to quarrel at the *Faults*.

Thus in caſe a *Drunken Husband* ſhould fall to a *Lady*'s ſhare, if ſhe will be *wiſe* and *patient*, his *Wine* ſhall be of her ſide. It will throw a Veil over her Miſtakes, and will ſet out and improve every thing ſhe does that he is pleas'd with. Others will like him leſs, and by that means he may perhaps like her the more. When after having din'd too well, he is receiv'd at home without a *Storm*, or ſo much as a Reproachful Look, the *Wine* will naturally work out all in Kindneſs, which a *Wife* muſt encourage, let it be wrapt up in never ſo much Impertinence. On the other ſide it would boil up in *Rage*, if the miſtaken *Wife* ſhould treat him roughly, like a certain thing call'd a *kind Shrew*, than which the World with all its Plenty cannot ſhew a more ſenſeleſs, ill-bred, forbidding Creature. Let the *Wife* conſider that where the *Man* will give ſuch frequent Intermiſſions of the uſe of his Reaſon, ſhe inſenſibly gets a Right of *Governing* in the *Vacancy*, and that raiſes her *Character* and *Credit* in the Family to a higher pitch than perhaps could be done under a *ſober Husband*, who never puts himſelf into an Incapacity of holding the *Reins*. If theſe are not intire *Conſolations*, at leaſt they are *Remedies* to ſome Degree. They cannot make *Drunkenneſs* a *Virtue*, nor a *Husband* given to it a *Felicity*; but the *Wife* will do herſelf no ill Office in endeavouring by theſe means to make the beſt of ſuch a *Lot*, in caſe it ſhould happen to fall to her, and by the help of a wiſe Obſervation to make that very *ſupportable*, which would otherwiſe be a *Load* that would *oppreſs* her.]

The

The next Caſe I will put is, that a *Husband* may be *Cholerick* and *Ill-humour'd*. To this may be ſaid, that *paſſionate* Men generally make amends at the foot of the Account. Such a Man if he is *angry* one day without any *Cauſe*, will the next day be as *kind* without any *Reaſon*. A Wife, by marking how the *Wheels* of ſuch a Man's Head are uſed to move, may eaſily bring over all his *Paſſions* to her Intereſt. Inſtead of being ſtruck down by his *Thunder*, ſhe may direct it where, and upon whom ſhe ſhall think it beſt apply'd. Thus are the ſtrongeſt *Poiſons* turn'd to the beſt *Remedies*, but then there muſt be *Art* in it, and a skilful Hand, elſe the leaſt *bungling* makes it Mortal. There is a great deal of nice Care requiſite to deal with a Man of this Complexion. *Choler* proceeds from *Pride*, and makes a Man ſo partial to himſelf, that he ſwells againſt Contradiction, and thinks he is leſſen'd if he is oppos'd. The *Wife* muſt in this Caſe take care of increaſing the *Storm* by any unwary *Word*, or kindling the *Fire* while the Wind is in a Corner which may blow it in her Face. She is dexterouſly to yield every thing 'till the *Husband* begins to cool, and then by ſlow degrees ſhe may riſe and gain upon him. Her *Gentleneſs* well turn'd will, like a Charm, diſpel his ill-placed *Anger*, a kind *Smile* will reclaim when a ſhrill pettiſh *Anſwer* would provoke him; rather than fail upon ſuch Occaſions, when other Remedies are too weak, a little *Flattery* may be admitted, which by being *neceſſary* will ceaſe to be *criminal*.

If *Ill-Humours* and *Sullenneſs*, and not open and ſudden Heat is his Diſeaſe, there is a way of treating that too, ſo as to make it a Grievance to be endur'd. In order to it, ſhe is firſt to know, that naturally *good Senſe* has a mixture of *Surly* in it; and there being ſo much *Folly* in the World, and for the moſt part ſo Triumphant, it gives frequent Temptations to raiſe the *Spleen* of Men who think Right. Therefore that which may generally be call'd *Ill-Humour* is not always a Fault; It becomes one, when either it is wrong apply'd, or is conti-

nu'd too long when it is not ſo. For this Reaſon the *Wife* muſt not too haſtily fix an ill Name upon that which may perhaps not deſerve it; and tho' the Caſe ſhould be, that the *Husband* might too ſourly reſent any thing he diſlikes, it may ſo happen that more Blame may belong to her *Miſtake* than to his *Ill-Humour*. If a *Husband* behaves himſelf ſometimes with an Indifference, that a *Wife* may think Offenſive, ſhe is in the wrong to put the worſt Senſe upon it, if by any means it will admit a better. Some *Wives* will call it *Ill-Humour*, if their *Husbands* change their *Stile* from that which they us'd while they made their firſt Addreſſes to them. Others will allow no *Intermiſſion* or *Abatement* in the Expreſſions of Kindneſs to them, not enough diſtinguiſhing times, and forgetting that 'tis impoſſible for Men to keep themſelves up all their Lives to the height of ſome extravagant Moments. A Man may at ſome times be leſs careful in little things, without any cold or diſobliging Reaſon for it, as a *Wife* may be too expecting in ſmaller Matters without drawing upon herſelf the Inference of being *Unkind*. And if the *Husband* ſhould be really *Sullen*, and have ſuch frequent Fits as might take away the Excuſe of it, it concerns her to have an Eye prepar'd to diſcover the firſt Appearances of Cloudy Weather, and to watch when the Fit goes off, which ſeldom laſts long if it is let alone. But while the Mind is ſore, every thing galls it, and that makes it neceſſary to let the *black Humour* begin to ſpend itſelf, before ſhe comes in and ventures to undertake it.

If, in the *Lottery* of the World, a *Lady* ſhould draw a *Covetous Husband*, I confeſs it will not make her proud of her good Luck, yet even ſuch a one may be endur'd too, tho' there are few Paſſions more untractable than that of *Avarice*. She muſt firſt take care that her *Definition* of *Avarice* may not be a *Miſtake*. She is to examine every Circumſtance of her *Husband*'s Fortune, and weigh the Reaſon of every thing ſhe expects from him, before ſhe has Right to pronounce that Sentence.

The

The Complaint is now ſo general againſt all *Husbands*, that it gives great Suſpicion of its being often ill-grounded. It is impoſſible they ſhould all deſerve that Cenſure, and therefore it is certain that 'tis many times miſ-apply'd. He that *ſpares* in every thing is an inexcuſable *Niggard*, he that *ſpares* in nothing is an inexcuſable *Madman*. The *Man* is to *ſpare* in what is leaſt neceſſary, to lay out more Liberally in what is moſt requir'd in our ſeveral Circumſtances. Yet this will not always ſatisfy. There are *Wives* who are impatient of the Rules of Oeconomy, and are apt to call their *Husbands* Kindneſs in queſtion, if any other Meaſure is put to their Expence than that of their own *Fancies*. Let the *Ladies* be ſure to avoid this dangerous Error, ſuch a Partiality to themſelves which is ſo offenſive to an Underſtanding Man, that he will very ill bear a *Wife*'s giving herſelf ſuch an injurious Preference to all the *Family*, and whatever belongs to it.

But to admit the worſt, that the *Husband* is really a *cloſe-handed Wretch*, the *Wife* muſt in this, as in other Caſes, endeavour to make it leſs Afflicting to herſelf, and muſt firſt obſerve *ſeaſonable Hours* of Speaking, when ſhe offers any thing in Oppoſition to this Reigning Humour; a *third Hand* and a *wiſe Friend* may often prevail more than ſhe will be allow'd to do in her own Cauſe. Sometimes ſhe is dextrouſly to go along with him in things where ſhe ſees that the niggardly part of his Mind is moſt predominant, by which ſhe will have the better Opportunity of perſuading him in things where he may be more indifferent. Our Paſſions are very unequal, and are apt to be rais'd or ſunk according as they work upon different Objects. They are not to be *ſtopt* or *reſtrain'd* in thoſe things where our Mind is more particularly engag'd. In other matters they are more tractable, and will ſometims give Reaſon a Hearing, and admit a fair Diſpute. More than that, there are few Men even in this Inſtance of *Avarice* ſo entirely abandon'd to it, that at ſome Hours and upon ſome Oc-

ſions will not forget their Natures, and for that time turn Prodigal. The ſame Man who will *grudge* himſelf what is neceſſary, let his *Pride* be rais'd and he ſhall be *Profuſe*; at another time his *Anger* ſhall have the ſame effect, a *Fit* of *Vanity*, *Ambition*, and ſometimes of Kindneſs, ſhall open and enlarge his *Narrow Mind*. A *Doſe* of *Wine* will work upon his *tough* Humour, and for the time diſſolve it. The *Wife*'s Buſineſs muſt be, if this Caſe happens, to watch theſe *Critical Moments*, and not let one of them ſlip without making her advantage of it; and ſhe may be ſaid to want Skill, if by theſe means ſhe is not able to ſecure herſelf in a good Meaſure againſt the Inconveniences this ſcurvy Quality in her *Husband* might bring upon her, except he ſhould be ſuch an incurable *Monſter*, as it is to be hop'd will never fall to a good Woman's ſhare.

The laſt Suppoſition I will make is, if the *Husband* ſhould be *Weak*, and *Incompetent* to make uſe of the Privileges that belong to him. It will be yielded that ſuch a one leaves room for a great many Objections. But God Almighty ſeldom ſends a *Grievance* without a *Remedy*, or at leaſt ſuch a Mitigation as takes away a great part of the Sting and the Smart of it. To make ſuch a Misfortune leſs heavy, the *Wife* is firſt to bring to her Obſervation, that ſhe very often makes a better Figure, for her Husband's making no great one; and there ſeems to be little Reaſon why the ſame *Lady* that chooſes a *Waiting-woman* with *worſe Looks*, may not be content with a *Husband* with leſs *Wit*; the Argument being equal, from the Advantage of the Compariſon. If ſhe will be more aſham'd in ſome Caſes of ſuch a *Husband*, ſhe will be leſs afraid than ſhe would perhaps of a wiſe one. His *unſeaſonable Weakneſs* may no doubt ſometimes grieve her, but then ſet againſt this, that it gives her the Dominion if ſhe will make the right uſe of it. It is next to his being *Dead*, in which Caſe the *Wife* has right to Adminiſter; therefore let her be ſure, if ſhe has ſuch an *Idiot*, that none except herſelf may

have

have the benefit of the Forfeiture. Such a Fool is a dangerous Beaſt, if others have the keeping of him, and ſhe muſt be very undextrous, if when her *Husband* ſhall reſolve to be an *Aſs*, ſhe does not take care he may be her *Aſs*. But ſhe muſt go skilfully about it, and above all things take heed of diſtinguiſhing in Publick what a kind of *Husband* he is. Her inward Thoughts muſt not hinder the outward Payment of the Conſideration that is due to him. Her ſlighting him in Company, beſides that it would to a diſcerning By-ſtander give too great Encouragement for the making nearer Applications to her, is in itſelf ſuch an indecent way of aſſuming, that it may provoke the ſame Creature to break looſe and to ſhew his *Dominion* for his Credit, which he was content to forget for his Eaſe. In ſhort the ſureſt and moſt approv'd Method will be to do like a wiſe *Miniſter* to an eaſy *Prince*, firſt give him the Orders you afterwards receive from him. With all this, that which a *Wife* is to pray for, is a *wiſe Husband*, one that by knowing how to be a *Maſter*, for that very reaſon will not let her feel the Weight of it: One whoſe Authority is ſo ſoften'd by his Kindneſs, that it gives her Eaſe without abridging her *Liberty*: One that will return ſo much Tenderneſs for her *juſt Eſteem* of him, that ſhe will never want *Power*, tho' ſhe will ſeldom care to uſe it. Such a *Husband* is as much above all the other Kinds of them, as a *Rational Subjection* to a Prince is to be preferr'd before the Diſquiet and Uneaſineſs of *unlimited Liberty*. And ſuch a *gentle* and *reaſonable Dominion* in the *Husband*, is as much above the *lordly* and *domineering Superiority* affected by ſome *Men* over their *Wives*, as a *juſt* and *lawful Authority* is preferable to an *abſolute* and *arbitrary* Tyranny.

Before I leave this Head, I will add a Word or two more concerning the *Wife*'s Behaviour to her *Husband*'s Friends, which requires the moſt refin'd Part of her Underſtanding to acquit herſelf well of it. She is to ſtudy how to live with them, with more Care than ſhe

is to apply to any other Part of her Life; eſpecially at firſt, that ſhe may not ſtumble at the firſt ſetting out. The Family into which ſhe is grafted will generally be apt to expect, that like a Stranger in a Foreign Country ſhe ſhould conform to their Methods, and not bring in a new Model by her own Authority. The *Friends* in ſuch a Caſe are tempted to riſe up in Arms as againſt an unlawful Invaſion, ſo that ſhe is with the utmoſt Caution to avoid the leaſt Appearances of any thing of this kind; and that ſhe may with leſs Difficulty afterwards give her Directions, let her be ſure at firſt to receive them from her Husband's *Friends*. Let her gain them to her by early applying to them, and they will be ſo ſatisfy'd, that, as nothing is more thankful than *Pride* when it is comply'd with, they will ſtrive which of them ſhall moſt recommend her. And when they have helpt her to take Root in her *Husband*'s Opinion, ſhe will have leſs Dependence upon theirs, tho' ſhe muſt not neglect any reaſonable Means of preſerving it. She is to conſider that a *Man* govern'd by his *Friends*, is very eaſily inflam'd by them; and that one who is not ſo, will yet for his own Sake expect to have them conſider'd. It is eaſily improv'd to a *Point* of *Honour* in a *Husband*, not to have his Relations neglected, and nothing is more dangerous than to raiſe an Objection which is grounded upon *Pride*; it is the moſt ſtubborn and laſting Paſſion we are ſubject to, and where it is the firſt Cauſe of the *War*, it is very hard to make a ſecure *Peace*. Her Caution in this is of the laſt Importance to her.

And that ſhe may the better ſucceed in it, let her carry a ſtrict Eye upon the *Impertinence* of her *Servants*; take heed that their *ill Humour* may not engage her to take Exceptions, or their too much aſſuming in ſmall Matters raiſe Conſequences which may bring her under great Diſadvantage. Remember that in the Caſe of a *Royal Bride*, thoſe about her are generally ſo far ſuſpected to bring in a foreign Intereſt that in moſt Countries

tries they are inſenſibly reduc'd to a very ſmall Number, and thoſe of ſo low a Figure, that it does not admit the being *Jealous* of them. In little, and in the Proportion, this may be the *Caſe* of every *New-marry'd Woman*, and therefore it may be more adviſeable for her to gain the *Servants* ſhe finds in a Family, than to tie herſelf too faſt to thoſe ſhe carries into it.

A prudent *Woman* will not overlook theſe *Reflexions*, becauſe they may appear ſmall and inconſiderable; for it may be ſaid, that as the *greateſt Streams* are made up of the *ſmall Drops* at the head of the Springs from whence they are deriv'd, ſo the *greateſt Circumſtances* of her Life will be in ſome degree directed by theſe ſeeming Trifles, which having the Advantage of being the firſt *Acts* of it, have a greater effect than ſingly in their own Nature they could pretend to.

Let all Wives, as much as Nature will give them leave, forget the great Indulgence they have found at Home. After ſuch a gentle Diſcipline as they have been generally under from fond *Parents*, they will diſlike every thing that ſeems to be harſher to them. The Tenderneſs of kind *Parents* is of another Nature, and differing from that which they will meet with firſt in any Family into which they ſhall be tranſplanted; and yet they may be very kind too, and afford no juſtifiable Reaſon for the Complaint. *Wives* muſt not be frighted with the firſt Appearances of a *differing Scene*, for when they are us'd to it, they may like the Houſe they go to better than that they left, and their *Husband*'s Friends will have ſo much advantage of their *Parents*, that the latter will yield up the Competition; and, as well as they love her, every *Father* and *Mother* will be glad to ſurrender their *Daughter* to ſuch a *Rival*.

The *MOTHER.*

THE Firſt Conſideration we ſhould have, in reflecting on the *Duties* of Life, is to pay *Obedience* to the *Laws* of *God*, to pleaſe him, and to render ourſelves ſo acceptable in his Sight as may ſecure us not only a *Preſent* but a *Future* Happineſs.

And tho' the *Reflexions* we have already made have been intermix'd with ſuch as have been purely *civil*, and related only to *temporal* Life, yet our main View has been to the *Eternal* one; for whatever tends to *Virtue* tends alſo to *Salvation*.

The principal Care of the *Mother* being to Educate her Children well, let us in the firſt place obſerve, that when they are injoin'd *to bring them up in the Nurture and Admonition of the Lord*, 'tis according to the Letter, to bring them up in the *Chriſtian Religion*, to teach them their *Duty*, what they are to *Believe* and *Practiſe:* to inſtruct them in the Knowledge of *God* and *Jeſus Chriſt*, to ſhew them in what Condition they are by *Nature*, and to what they are advanced by *Grace*. This is the greateſt Teſtimony of Love that *Parents* can ſhew their *Children*, the greateſt Kindneſs they can do them, the greateſt *Bleſſing* and the beſt *Inheritance* they can beſtow upon them. Without this it is a little thing to ſay, that neither *Wiſdom*, *Riches*, *Honours*, nor any thing beſides can make them *happy*, for without this they will with all the reſt be miſerable.

Would you, *Parents*, have your *Children Honour* you, and behave themſelves *Obediently*, and as becomes them in all Reſpects? Bring them up then in the *Fear and Nurture*

Nurture of the Lord; teach them the *Chriſtian Law*, let them read and be converſant in the Holy *Scriptures*, they will there ſee their *Duty*, they will there find ſuch Leſſons of Inſtruction, ſuch great Encouragements and Promiſes of vaſt Rewards, as will ſecure their *Honour* and *Reſpect*, their *Service* and *Obedience* to their *Parents*. By *Nurture and Admonition of the Lord*; may alſo be underſtood ſuch a Religious Reproof and Caſtigation of Children as is agreeable to the Doctrine and good Spirit of *Chriſt the Lord*. Would you who are *Parents* be *Honour'd* and *Obey'd* by your *Children?* take the Courſes which are propereſt for that Purpoſe; do not think of bringing your Deſigns to paſs by being hard, moroſe, and always out of *humour* with them, by treating them inhumanly and cruelly, by diſcouraging them continually with Frowns and ill Looks, with *Tauntings* and *Upbraidings*, with *Threats* and *Chaſtiſements:* They will not need ſo great *Severities*, ſuch *ſlaviſh* Uſage, ſuch daily Menaces of *diſinheriting* and *caſting* off, and ſuch like rugged and illiberal *Treatment* as is ſometimes ſhewn them. Theſe things do often but inflame them, and exaſperate them to greater Contumacy, extinguiſh by degrees their natural *Piety* and *Affections*, make them avoid your ſight, fly from you as from Miſchief, to dread you like an Executioner, ſhake off the *Yoke* as ſoon as poſſibly they can, and if not *hate* yet never love you more. They will be won with better Arguments than theſe, you may ſecure their *Honour* and *Obedience* better by more natural and gentle Methods. Give them ſuch good Inſtructions as you find in *ſacred Writ*; remember them of God's Commands to *Honour and Obey their Parents*; admoniſh them from thence, with the *Spirit of Meekneſs*, to take *good heed to their Ways*, how they tranſgreſs the Laws of *God* by diſobeying their *Parents* Commands when juſt and reaſonable, and how they ſhall one Day be put to anſwer for the neglectful or contemptuous Breach of them.

Lay but at firſt this good Religious *Foundation* in their *Minds*, and you may build upon it for ever after; it will hold

hold when all Things elſe fail, and it will forward all Conſiderations beſides; it will give *ſtrength* to every *Argument*, it will be the readieſt way to convince young People, you deſign their *Good* in all Injunctions and Commands; they will ſee that their *Parents* urge no more than *God* enjoins, and have no other Intereſt to purſue than their *Happineſs*. The Reception of any Argument, the Power that either Advice or Command ſhall obtain, depends in a great meaſure upon the Way and Manner of propounding it. If you have once convinc'd the *Party* that you deſign his Benefit, you have already gain'd a favourable Attention, and every thing you ſay ſhall be conſider'd; but if you give him Cauſe to ſuſpect your Kindneſs, he will neglect or coldly entertain all you ſhall offer: When Young ones are convinced of the true Love and Kindneſs of their *Parents*, (and it is very eaſy to convince them by gentle Uſage) they will bear with *Decency* and *Patience* a great many hard uneaſy Things; *Reproof*, and *Admonition*, and *Puniſhments* will find *Submiſſion* and *Obedience*, when they come to think it is in order to their *Good*, or at leaſt deſign'd for that purpoſe. It is not to be thought that any Manner of *Reſtraint* ſhould be for the preſent eaſy, or well taken; a *Parent* is not to look for this, nor to have any great Regard to it; but he is ſo to order his *Chaſtiſements*, that upon Conſideration and Reflexion the *Children* may find that all was well intended towards them; that all their *Admonitions* and *Reproofs*, *Reſtraints* and *Puniſhments*, were natural and moderate, ſuch as were proper for their *Age*, *Condition* and *Offence*; ſuch as were likely to effect *Amendment*, and prevent or cure an Evil; ſuch as other *Parents*, wiſe and tender, might make uſe of on the like Occaſions, ſuch as Religion wou'd adviſe and juſtify. Such *Nurture* and *Admonition*, ſuch *Inſtruction*, *Reproof* and *Chaſtiſement* as this, wou'd look as if it came from the *Lord*, who never grieves us *willingly* or for his *Pleaſure*, but for *Neceſſity*, for our *Amendment* and our laſting *Good*, and ſuch as this wou'd

ſecure

ſecure the *Honour* and *Reſpect*, the *Service* and *Obedience* of *Children* to *Parents*.

The Number of Cruel and Unnatural *Parents* are ſo ſmall, that few *Children* ſuffer at their Hands, and therefore it will not be reaſonable that many ſhould apply what has been ſaid too cloſely to themſelves, or think it their own Caſe, whether *Parents* or *Children*. The latter are not to think the *Parents* Cruel or Unnatural becauſe they have been conſtantly reproved for their Evil *Words* or *Practice*, and ſtrictly reſtrain'd from doing any thing hurtful to themſelves or others, or ſharply puniſh'd for having done it: For theſe are all of them *Duties* in *Parents*, and cannot therefore be their *Faults*. Beſides, it may very well happen, that *Parents* may be angry *ſooner* and retain it *longer* with great Reaſon and Juſtice, when the Children think otherwiſe, becauſe they underſtand Things better, ſee the Natural Tendency of many of their Actions and Humours, and the Conſequences they may draw after them, and the *Hazards* and ſinful Courſes they may engage them in. Beſides a World of things, which *Ignorance*, *Thoughtleſsneſs*, and *Inexperience* keep the Children from conſidering, they are too much concern'd in their own behalf, to paſs a true Impartial Judgment on the *Severities* they undergo; too apt to juſtify their own Conduct, and to conclude themſelves, if not entirely *Innocent*, yet not deſerving ſuch *Reproof* or *Puniſhment*: And after all that can be ſaid, it were much better for the World and more reaſonable, all things conſider'd, that more *Children* ſhou'd ſuffer from the *Rigours* of their *Parents*, than do, or ever will do, than that *Parents*, out of fear of offending on this Side, ſhou'd be reſtrain'd from uſing ſuch *Severities*, as they who know their *Childrens* Humours and Inclinations beſt, ſhall think convenient; or that Children ſhould diſpute, conteſt, and quarrel their Right, or ſhould withdraw themſelves from their *Obedience* upon any ſuch Pretence. Of the two *Evils*, this beyond Compariſon would be the greater; and however

hard

hard and heavy the *Dominion* of ſome *Parents* may be, I know no Remedy or Way to eaſe the *Children* while they continue under them: but a *ſubmiſſive*, *meek*, and *dutiful* Deportment towards them. *Patience* and quiet undergoing what is laid upon them, will ſooneſt bring the *Parents* to Conſideration and Reaſon, and mollify their *Fury*, and ſometimes their *Hearts*; when a perverſe and contumacious *Obſtinacy* will but exaſperate to greater *Anger* and *Severity*. And *Time* at length will either vanquiſh their *Auſterity*, or ſet the Children at their *Liberty*.

Enough has been ſaid of the *Duty* of *Children* towards their *Parents*, and ſomething has been obſerv'd of what is owing from *Parents* to their *Children*, which will admit of further *Reflexion*. To determine in any Manner of Exactneſs, or to any Uſe and Purpoſe, the Proportion of Proviſion *Parents* are to make for *Children*, it will be neceſſary to have Conſideration and Reſpect to their *Age*, *Condition* and *Capacity*. Reſpect muſt needs be had to their *Age*, becauſe there is a Time when *Children* are ſo helpleſs, that all they want and can enjoy, muſt be provided for them, and it can lie on no Body ſo well as *Parents* to do it. In this Caſe *Proviſion* includes every thing that Children ſtand in need of; this *Nature* teaches; and as they grow up in Years, their *Quality* and *Condition*, their *Capacity* and *Abilities*, both of *Body* and *Mind*, are to come into Conſideration, and they muſt be more and more inur'd to *Labour*, *Diligence*, and *Induſtry*. It is not to be thought, that *Parents* are oblig'd only to provide for their *Children*, *Mony*, *Lands*, and *Houſes*, and then have done their *Duty*, they muſt alſo provide them with Abilities of *Body* and *Mind*, both to obtain, preſerve and uſe the *Benefits* they intend to beſtow upon them; they muſt accuſtom them, while young, to Application and Attention to Buſineſs; theſe things are neceſſary both to *Poor* and *Rich*, and without them the *Poor* will never be *Rich*, and the *Rich* will be quickly *Poor:* It is certain, that the *Poor* can never

diſcharge

diſcharge the *Duty* of Parents well to their *Children*, without inuring them to *Labour* and *Hardſhip*; that is the Proviſion they are only capable of making for them, and that they are oblig'd to make. *God* gives their *Children Health* and *Strength*, and they muſt ſee them well employ'd and us'd; that is the Portion *God* enables them to give them, and the ſooner they begin with them, and the cloſer they purſue them to Labour, Diligence, and Induſtry, the kinder they will be to them, the better they will provide for them. 'Tis certain, that the pooreſt in the World are oblig'd to provide for their *Children*, according to the beſt of their Abilities, and as certain, that they can provide for them no otherwiſe, than by accuſtoming them to *Labour* and *Induſtry*.

It looks at firſt like doing them no Harm, to let them continue *Lazy*, *Idle*, and doing nothing; and many Poor People are extremely guilty of this way of *Education*, imagining it is a Piece of Kindneſs to their *Children*, to let them rather *beg* their Bread than put them to *Labour* for it; a Miſtake not only Miſchievous to the *Commonwealth*, but of moſt pernicious Conſequence to their *Children*, the unkindeſt thing they can do to them; for tho' it pleaſes them for the preſent, yet it entails on them perpetual *Miſery*, and very often untimely *Death*, by engaging them in wicked Courſes, the ſure and ready Road to Ruin. Whereas the bringing them up to Labour, and continual Buſineſs of ſome kind or other, keeps them at leaſt in a mean *Suſtinency*, if not in *Plenty*, and puts them in a Capacity of emerging out of their Difficulties, and bettering their Condition. Poor People do really offend *God*, as well as injure their *Children*, by keeping them *idle*, by not inuring them moſt conſtantly to ſuch Labours as God enables them to bear. We know he ties them to do what they can for their *Children*, and they are capable of doing nothing but this for them. Wherefore *God* has ty'd them to this; and if they will not do this for their *Children*, St. *Paul* will tell them, *they deny the Faith, and are worſe than Infidels.*

As

As for the *Richer* and *Better* ſort of People, their *Quality* and *Condition* are alſo to be conſider'd in determining what Kind of *Proviſion* is to be made for their *Children*. Cuſtom and the Uſages of the *Country* make many things *decent* and *fit*, which otherwiſe wou'd be *indifferent*: And Diſtinction of *Condition* and *Quality* is abſolutely neceſſary to the keeping up *Quiet* and *Order* in the World. It is impoſſible for Mankind to live in *Peace*, without a due Subordination of one Condition to another; and tho' theſe things conſider'd in themſelves appear neither *Moral* nor *Religious*, but Matters of *Decency* and *Form*, yet whoſo ſets himſelf to conſider Things thoroughly, will find that theſe Things, in Conjunction one with another, are ſo abſolutely neceſſary to the ſecuring Order and Peace, that without them neither Religion nor Morality could live and flouriſh in the World; and therefore they who think meanly of theſe Things, and that Mankind is above them, are, it may be, miſtaken in Mankind, and underſtand not Human Nature enough. They who endeavour to ſubvert and overturn them, are not aware of the *Evils* that would enſue; it cannot be told in what Rank of *Virtue*, *Decency*, *Honour*, and *Diſtinction* of *Quality* and *Condition* ſtand; but yet it is eaſy to ſee, that without theſe Things there would be nothing but *Confuſion* and *Diſorder* in the World: It is therefore poſſible for one Man to do that, by reaſon of his *Quality* and *Condition*, with Reaſon and Innocence, which another cannot do, by reaſon of his Condition, without Offence and Blame. 'Tis poſſible for a Man of good Quality to make ſuch Proviſion for his *Children*, as may be truly Faulty, which if a meaner Man had made, he had done well and laudably; wherefore till Men find a *better Rule* to walk by in theſe Caſes, than *Decency*, *Cuſtom* and *good Fame*; they will not do either well or wiſely to neglect and overlook them; though one cannot aſſign them the particular Command of God, which they offend againſt in ſuch Neglect.

Upo

Upon theſe Accounts it may be utterly impoſſible for any one elſe to preſcribe to a *Parent* a Rule of Proviſion for his *Children*, either as to *Kind* or to *Quality*; but it will not be difficult for himſelf to do it, taking theſe Things in Conſideration. Only let him not be unmindful of theſe two Things, that he never *Educate* his *Children*, above the Proviſion he deſigns to make for them, and that he inure them to Labour, Diligence, and Induſtry, to Attention and Application as they are capable of bearing; this is common to all *Qualities* and *Conditions*; this muſt go along with all *Children*, the *pooreſt* are not too *mean* for theſe *Qualities*, nor the *richeſt* above them.

Education of *Children* above the Proviſion intended to be made for them, will ſlacken their Diligence and Induſtry, upon Preſumption there will not be ſo great Occaſion for them. The Diſappointment will alſo be great and troubleſom, and the Children reap no manner of Advantage by it: It being much more eaſy to bear with a mean Condition conſtantly, than to fall into it from a plentiful and a good one, which is the Caſe of People better educated than provided for. The ſoft and tender Uſage of them while Young, and capable of undergoing Labour and Hardſhip, is truly a Diskindneſs to them, without an anſwerable Proviſion for them afterwards. Becauſe, whenever they are left to ſhift for themſelves they are no better than expoſed, naked as it were and defenceleſs, unable to procure a Livelihood, and in much worſe Condition than their *Inferiors*. This is the Misfortune frequently of being born of an *Ancient* and genteel *Family*, or of *Parents*, preſumed to be much *Richer* than they truly are. Their *Name*, *Quality*, and *Reputation* entail upon them *Miſery* and Want; they muſt be all bred, as if they were to inherit great *Eſtates*, when their *Inheritance* is to be nothing but a *Name* that does them *Miſchief*. This is not deſign'd a Kindneſs to the *Children*, but generally proceeds from *Pride* and *Vanity*, which make the *Children* Mean and Miſerable indeed,

deed, for fear the *Parents* ſhould be thought ſo. 'Tis one of the unkindeſt things a *Parent* can do to breed his *Children* up in *Delicacy* and *Softneſs*, while they are Young and Strong, and then to leave them to themſelves, to work their Fortune out of Weakneſs and Folly; 'tis very ill for the *richeſt* Parents that are, to deal too tenderly with their *Children*, let them leave them as well provided for as they can; but 'tis great Cruelty in *Parents* that are able to leave them little or nothing, to leave them *Pride* and *Lazineſs*, and an Incapacity both of *Body* and *Mind* to do themſelves any Service; as if the *Reproach* and *Blame*, that muſt unavoidably fall on theſe unkind *Parents*, were not more to be reſpected and fear'd, than the *Reputation* of having a *ſmall Eſtate*, and being unable to leave them a conſiderable *Fortune*. This is apparently preferring their own *Fame* to the true and laſting Benefit of their *Children*, in a material Point, which is a very ill way of providing for them.

And theſe People, of appearing *Faſhion* and *Quality*, though to be pity'd more, are as much to be blam'd as the *poorer* ſort, who will not inure their *Children* to Labour and cloſe Application, becauſe their *Inability* to provide for them according to their *Quality* and *Condition*, will not excuſe them for neglecting to do as they are able. The Effects of this unadvis'd way of *Education* are ſo remarkably bad, that 'tis a wonder Men ſhould need any Caution againſt it. The *Male* Children either fall into the meaneſt of *Servitude*, the Refuge of the idle and uninſtructed Part of Mankind, or betake themſelves in Deſpair to the *Wars* abroad, or to *Robberies* at home. The *Female* fall too often into the Hands of wicked *Tempters*, thro' want of *Ability* to employ themſelves in honeſt Courſes, and an utter Incapacity of maintaining their Condition; their *Poverty* making them unfit for their *Equals*, and their ſoft expenſive *Education* making their *Inferiors* afraid to match with them; beſides the hazard of bringing the *Spirit of a good Family* along with them.

Theſe

Theſe are ſome of the natural Miſchiefs of a *Parent*'s educating his *Children* much above the Proviſion he is able, or willing to make for them; ſufficient to diſcourage any one from doing it, conſidering how much eaſier 'tis to advance and riſe above our Hopes, than to fall from our Expectations; and how much kinder it is to leave our *Children* Satisfaction and Content, if not Surpriſe and Pleaſure, than Grief and Shame upon their Diſappointment.

There is alſo the oppoſite Extreme which is not to be forgotten, and that is a mean and ſordid *Education*, when *Parents* deſign to leave or cannot help the leaving their Children a great *Fortune*. This Humour is not directly to be charg'd as a *Sin*, but 'tis a ſad *Indecency*, and piece of *Indiſcretion*; a thing that has often very ill Conſequences, and cannot eaſily have *Good*; for the young People either ſeeing good *Reaſon* to *hope*, or finding it certain, that they ſhall one Day ſucceed to a *Fortune* ſuperior to the Condition they are *educated* in, do either begin to deſpiſe or to neglect their Buſineſs; they think themſelves above their *Calling*, or imagine they ſhall ſtand in little need of its *Aſſiſtance*, and upon either account ſlacken their Care and Induſtry, withdraw their Minds from their proper Concerns, grow very quickly bad *Servants*, and as ſoon as they come to *Liberty* and *Eſtate*, fall into all *Extravagance* and make a very *ill* Uſe of both. In a word, a mean and ſordid *Education* with the Proſpect of a plentiful Condition to follow, will hardly eſcape one of theſe two *Extremes*; either by Uſe they will contract a mean and ſordid *Spirit*, and in the midſt of Plenty live ſo wretched and penurious a *Life*, that a mean Eſtate had been ſufficient and moſt proper; or elſe there will too much Time be loſt in the way they are in, they will ſhake off their Condition, betake themſelves to looſe and profuſe Courſes, and be undone by too great *Plenty*.

A prudent *Parent* will therefore carefully avoid both theſe *Extremes*, and not *educate* his Children much *above*

or

or much *below* the *Proviſion* he deſigns to make for them; and that this may not ſeem to be out of the way, it is, if well conſider'd, the ſureſt means of rendring the Proviſions they make moſt ſerviceable and uſeful to their *Children*; *Children* will be encouraged to proſecute their Buſineſs with Induſtry and Application, knowing their Parents will take care to further and help them according to their *Beginnings*; and yet that ſuch Help and Aſſiſtance of itſelf will not ſuffice, without their own great Care and Induſtry, which will alſo be a Spur on that ſide. They muſt not be wanting to themſelves no more than their *Parents* will be, and then their Affairs are like to ſucceed: For if they either perceive their *Parents* unable to go thro' as they begun, they are diſcourag'd, griev'd, and aſham'd, and upon that grow deſperately Careleſs; or if able to do above what their preſent Condition requires, they then grow, as was before obſerv'd, intolerably Negligent, weary of their Way, and longing after Liberty, which being unſeaſonably obtained, is commonly us'd intemperately.

Parents, in making Proviſion for their *Children*, ſhould firſt fit them with an *Education* ſuitable to it, keep a *Mean* without either over or under doing the Matter; for ſince they are oblig'd in *Duty* to provide for them, they ought in *Reaſon* and *Prudence* to take all the Care they can to render ſuch *Proviſion* the moſt ſerviceable and uſeful to them.

The other thing a *Parent* ſhould not be unmindful of, is this, that whatever great *Proviſion* he intends to make for his *Children*, he do by all Means inure them to Diligence and Induſtry, to Application and Attention of *Mind*; theſe Qualities may chance to make ſome amends for the defect of *Mony* or *Eſtate*, but no Proviſion will ſupply the defect of them. Many emerge by theſe out of great Difficulties and Straits, and make their way to *Plenty* and *Proſperity*; many more for want of theſe decline from *Plenty* to much *Miſery*. No *Fortune* is above them, nor can continue well without them. There can

be

be no better Reaſon aſſign'd, why ſo many People of *Faſhion* are diſtinguiſh'd, as much by their *Vices*, as their *Birth* and *Quality*, from their *Inferiors*, than that they are ſo ſoftly *educated*, and fall into the worſt of Hands, their *own*, ſo ſoon; there is a great deal of Care, and Time, and Mony, oft expended on them, but it does not ſucceed ſo well with them, becauſe they muſt not be preſt to any thing, they muſt take what they will, and never be conſtrain'd to any thing Laborious and Difficult; a cloſe Attention and Application would break their *Spirits* quickly, and they would never love their Buſineſs again: This is the Opinion of fond and ignorant People, and quickly agreed to by the *young* ones, who are always afraid of being overcharg'd as well as their *Parents*, and think their *Hearts* will break a great deal ſooner than they will. A Miſcarriage of this kind does ſeldom or never happen, if things are well enquir'd into. The Miſcarriages are generally for want of this *Attention* and cloſe *Application*; theſe ſort of People will unavoidably have *Liberty* enough betimes, and therefore may well bear with *Reſtraint* and Labour beforehand for a *Seaſon*. If they are not taught how to employ their *Time* in ſomething fit and worthy of them while they are *Young*, they will never know how to do it when they grow up, and are wholly *Maſters* of it; wherefore *Parents*, who are only careful to provide *Eſtates* for their *Children*, do really forget half of their Buſineſs, which is to fit their *Children* for their *Eſtates*.

Now ſince it is neither fit or decent, or at leaſt not cuſtomary to put theſe People of *Quality* to *Trades* or ſettled *Callings*, it muſt needs be worſe with them, than their *Inferiors*, if they have not ſomething equivalent to ſuch *Employments*, to quicken their *Induſtry* and *Diligence*, to keep them buſy'd and amus'd, as profitably as they can, to inure them to the *Labours* of the *Mind*, and fit them for ſervices, that may in time be proper for them. There is no body but is born and oblig'd to ſerve his *Country* in ſome Capacity or other, and they who are

moſt

moſt at Liberty from their *Natural* and Domeſtick Neceſſities, whoſe Bodies are not ty'd to Labour, and earn the Suſtenance of a Family, are moſt oblig'd to give their Service to their *Country*, becauſe they have moſt Leiſure and fewer *Avocations*; and this the moſt Profuſe and Negligent, the moſt Voluptuous, Idle and Unſerviceable *Creatures* of *Quality* that are, know not how to deny. They are always ready to own their Obligation to ſerve their *Country* in Offices of Honour and Advantage; but then 'tis certain, that they ought to be fit and qualify'd to diſcharge thoſe *Duties* to the *Publick*, which they can never be, unleſs they are bred up, while *Young*, in a moſt diligent induſtrious Purſuit of ſuch *Attainments* as will qualify them for ſuch Services.

If *Parents* were as much oblig'd to ſeek their *Childrens* Miſchief as they are to provide well for them, and were to ſtudy long for it, they could not find a more effectual Way of doing it, than by breeding them up in *Idleneſs* and *Softneſs*, leaving them to themſelves, and to their natural Liſtleſsneſs; neither charging their *Memory* nor quickening their *Invention*, nor trying their *Judgment*, nor putting them to any Strait or Difficulty; they would without any further Trouble be undone; for under all theſe Prejudices the *Soul* will ſtill be active to Miſchief: The natural Inclinations will unqueſtionably ſway, for there is neither Reaſon nor Employments to hinder them, which are the only things we have to oppoſe to the Importunity of Temptations. *How can I do this thing and ſin againſt God*, is an Argument of great Religion; but to be well employ'd and full of honeſt Buſineſs, is much a greater *Security*, in as much as 'tis better to be *deaf*, than parley with the *Devil*, when he is laying Snares and trying to corrupt us. By doing *nothing* you ſhall quickly learn to do *Evil*. It is the *Stair* below it, and you cannot miſs of ſtepping on it; the Senſes are awake to every thing that calls, ready to entertain all evil Motions and Suggeſtions, to comply with all Deſires, and in a word, to fall into all the Snares that are laid for them.

Now

Now tho' theſe Matters do not look at firſt Sight, as if they any ways belong'd to making due Proviſion for Children, yet Experience will quickly ſhew, that all Proviſion elſe, without this Care, will either be to none or to little purpoſe. A great *Fortune* will only prove a great *Temptation* to *Folly* and *Extravagance*, unleſs the Mind be fitted to it, and prepared to uſe it well and wiſely, it will only ſerve to expoſe them to the greateſt Scorn and Contempt, and ſhew their Weakneſs more Conſpicuouſly; thus the Kindneſs *Parents* are ſo forward to expreſs in amaſſing great *Eſtates* for their *Children*, will not be ſo truly beneficial to them as they deſign it, unleſs they alſo take more Care about their *Education*, by inuring them to *Diligence* and *Induſtry*, by accuſtoming them to cloſe *Application* and *Attention* to whatever they are about, though mean and inconſiderable; for by theſe Means they will contract good *Habits*, and be fitted for Buſineſs of greater *Moment*, when it comes upon them. That certainly muſt be the beſt Proviſion for Children which will ſtand them in the beſt ſtead in all Conditions, which will help them to raiſe themſelves from *Meanneſs* to *Sufficiency* or *Plenty*, to prevent a Fall, or to bear it well and to recover it again; this is the Benefit of a good *Education*, the being accuſtom'd to Pains and Labour, both of *Body* and *Mind*, while young, pliable, and ſuſceptible of Impreſſions; wherefore this ſhould be provided for in the firſt Place, this is to be the Bottom and Foundation, upon this we may build whatever good we will; for 'twill bear it, and without it all the reſt will fall to nothing.

Tho' the preceding Reflexions ſeem to be addreſt more particularly to the *Father*, yet the *Mother* is all along as well underſtood; and where the Education of the *Children* falls to her Charge, the ſame is her *Duty*, the ſame is to be her Care, not only in the *educating* but in the whole Conduct of a *Parent* towards a *Child*.

Some *Parents* carry themſelves towards their Chidren, as if they thought themſelves under no Obligation to ob-

ſerve any Meaſures with them, and might uſe them as they pleas'd, they ſeem not to have any Regard to the Command of God, *Fathers provoke not your Children to Wrath*; they arbitrarily give them all manner of Provocations, and do not conſider that they are by that *Text* enjoin'd to be pitiful and gentle, complying with all the *Infirmities* of the *Children*, and in their ſeveral *Ages* proportioning to them ſeveral *Uſages* according to their *Needs* and *Capacities*. You, who are *Parents* of *Children*, mind above all things to ſeaſon their *Younger* Years with prudent and pious Principles, make them in love with *Virtue*, and habitually ſo before they come to chooſe and diſcern *Good* from *Evil*, that their Choice may be with leſs Difficulty and Danger. Provide for them wiſe, learned, and virtuous *Tutors*, good Company and Diſcipline; for 'tis a great *Folly* to heap up much Wealth for *Children*, and not to take care that they are qualified to make a good Uſe of it.

Parents muſt give good Examples, and obſerve a Reverent *Deportment* before their *Children*, with all thoſe Inſtances of *Charity* which uſually endear each other, *Sweetneſs* of *Converſation*, *Affability*, frequent Admonition; all ſignifications of *Love* and *Tenderneſs*, *Care* and *Watchfulneſs*, muſt be expreſs'd towards them, that they may look upon their *Parents* as their *Friends* and *Patrons*, their *Defence* and *Sanctuary*, their *Treaſure* and their *Guide*. And by the way, I muſt obſerve that much of this tender Care and natural Affection is loſt by *Mothers* neglecting to *nurſe* their Children themſelves. Nothing can excuſe their not doing it, but a Diſability, Sickneſs, Danger, or publick Neceſſity. No *Quality* can be pleaded in bar of this Duty, which Nature obliges every Mother to diſcharge.

Something has already been ſaid of the *Education* of *Children*, and of the Proviſion *Parents* ſhould make for them, which St. *Paul* calls a *laying up for their Children*. The enabling them by competent Portions, or good Trades, Arts, or Learning, to ſuſtain themſelves decently

ly in their Paſſage thro' this World, that they may not be expos'd to *Temptation*, to beggarly or unworthy Arts: And tho' this muſt be done without *Covetouſneſs*, without impatient and greedy Deſires of making them *Rich*, yet it muſt be done with much Care and great Affection, with all reaſonable Proviſion, according to our Power; and if we can, without *Sin*, we ſhould improve our *Eſtates* for them, that alſo is part of the *Duty* we owe to God. This *Rule* is to extend to all that deſcend from us, tho' we have been overtaken in a Fault, and have *unlawful* Iſſue. They alſo become part of our Care, yet ſo as not to injure the Production of the *lawful* Bed.

Parents muſt, according to their *Power* and *Reaſon*, provide *Husbands* or *Wives* for their *Children*; in which they muſt ſecure *Piety* and *Religion*, and the *Affection* and *Love* of the intereſted Perſons. After theſe, let them make what Proviſion they can for other Conveniencies and Advantages; ever remembring, that they can do no injury more afflictive to the Children, than to join them with Cords of a diſagreeing Affection. It is like tying a *Wolf* and a *Lamb*, or planting the *Vine* in a Garden of *Coleworts*. Let them be perſuaded with reaſonable Inducements to make them willing, and to chooſe according to the *Parents* wiſh, but at no hand let them be forced: For as a Learned and Pious Prelate ſays on this occaſion, *Better to ſit up all Night, than to go to Bed to a Dragon*. The Duty of *Parents* to their *Children*, as to their providing for their *Nouriſhment*, begins from the very Birth, and continues 'till the Child be able to perform it of himſelf. 'Tis a Leſſon taught by *Nature*. Even the *Savage* Beaſts have a great Care and Tenderneſs in nouriſhing their Young, and therefore may ſerve to Reproach and Condemn all Parents who ſhall be ſo unnatural as to neglect this. And much more do they deſerve Reproach, who take no care of their Childrens Souls. The Devil will be diligent enough to inſtil into them all Wickedneſs and Vice, even from their *Cradles*; and their being in all our Natures ſo much greater Apt-

neſs to *Evil* than to *Good*, there's need of great Watchfulneſs to prevent thoſe Endeavours of that *Enemy of Souls*, which can no way be done, but by poſſeſſing them at firſt with good things, breeding in them a Love to *Virtue*, and a Hatred of *Vice*, that ſo when the *Temptations* come, they may be arm'd againſt them; this ſurely is above all things the Duty of Parents to look after, and the neglect of it is a horrible Cruelty. We juſtly look upon thoſe *Parents* as moſt unnatural Wretches, that take away the Life of their *Child*. But alas! that is *Mercy* and *Tenderneſs*, compar'd to this of neglecting his *Education*; for by that they ruin his Soul, and make him miſerable eternally. God knows there are Multitudes of ſuch cruel *Parents*, that thus give up their *Children* to be poſſeſs'd by the Devil, for want of an early acquainting them with the ways of God. How few indeed are there who do conſcionably perform this Duty? That is but too apparent, from the ſtrange Rudeneſs and Ignorance that is generally among *Youth*; The *Children* of thoſe who call themſelves *Chriſtians* being frequently as ignorant of *God* and *Chriſt*, as the meereſt Heathens. But whoſoever they are that thus neglect this great Duty, let them know, that 'tis not only a fearful Miſery they bring upon their poor *Children*, but alſo a terrible Guilt upon themſelves. For as God ſays to the careleſs Watchman, *that if any Soul periſh* by his Negligence, *that Soul ſhall be required at his Hands*: So ſurely will it fare with all *Parents*, who have this Office of *Watchmen* intruſted to them by God over their own *Children*. To make the Seed of Virtue thrive and flouriſh in our *Children*, to make them take Root downward, and bear Fruit upward, there are requir'd *Encouragement* and *Correction*: We ſhould endeavour to make Children in Love with their Duty, by offering them *Rewards*; and when they do well, we ſhould encourage them to go on. It is an ill courſe ſome *Parents* take, who think they muſt never appear to their *Children*, but with a Face of *Sourneſs* and *Auſterity*. To be harſh and unkind to them when they

they do well, as if they do ill, is the ſure way to *provoke them to Wrath*, and then St *Paul* tells us what will be the Iſſue of it: They will be diſcourag'd, they will have no Heart to go on in any good Courſe, when the Parent affords them no Countenance. But when *Encouragement* will do no good, *Correction* becomes Seaſonable; when all fair Means and Perſuaſions prevail not, there is then a neceſſity of uſing ſharper; and let that be firſt try'd in Words, I mean, not by railing and foul Language, but in ſober, yet ſharp *Reproof*. And if that fail too, then proceed to *Blows*. 'Tis a cruel Fondneſs to ſpare a few *Stripes*, and venture thoſe ſad Miſchiefs which commonly befal the *Child* that is left to himſelf. *Correction* muſt be given in ſuch a manner as may be likely to do good; it muſt be timely, the *Child* muſt not be ſuffer'd to run on in any *Ill*, 'till it has got a *Habit* and a *Stubbornneſs* too. This is a great Error in many Parents: They will let their Children alone for ſeveral Years to do what they liſt, permit them to lie, to ſteal, without ever ſo much as rebuking them; on the contrary, they will too often pleaſe themſelves to ſee the witty *Thefts* of the *Child*, and think it matters not what they do while they are little; but alas! all that while the *Vice* gets *Root*, and that many times ſo deep a one, that all they can do afterwards, whether by *Words* or *Blows*, can never pluck it up. *Correction* muſt be moderate, as well as timely; it muſt not exceed the Quality of the *Fault*, nor the *Tenderneſs* of the *Child*: Neither muſt it be given in a *Rage*; if it is, it will not only be in danger of being immoderate, but will loſe its Effects upon the *Child*, who will think he is corrected, not becauſe he has done a Fault, but becauſe his *Parent* is Angry, and ſo will rather blame the *Parent* than himſelf; whereas on the contrary, care ſhould be taken to make the Child as ſenſible of the *Fault* as of the *Smart*, without which he will never be thoroughly amended.

After *Children* are grown up, and are paſt the Age of *Education*, there are yet other Offices for the *Parent* to

perform to them; the Parent is ſtill to watch over them in reſpect of their *Souls*, to obſerve how they practiſe thoſe *Precepts* which were given them in their *Education*, and accordingly to Exhort, Encourage, or Reprove, as he finds occaſion.

So alſo for their outward Eſtate, Parents are to put them into ſome Courſe of living in the World. If God has bleſs'd them with *Wealth*, according to what they have they muſt diſtribute to their Children, remembring, that ſince they were the Inſtruments of bringing them into the World, they are, according to their Ability, to provide for their comfortable living in it. Unnatural are thoſe Parents, who, ſo they may have enough to ſpend in their own Riot and Exceſs, care not what becomes of their *Children*, never thinking of providing for them 'till themſelves be dead; heap up perhaps great matters for them againſt that time, but in the mean while afford them not ſuch a competency, as may enable them to live in the World. There are ſeveral Miſchiefs come from this. It leſſens the Child's Affection to his *Parent*, which ſometimes proceeds ſo far, as to make him wiſh his *Death*: A Fault however, which no Temptation can excuſe in a *Child*; yet 'tis alſo a great Fault in the *Parent* to give that *Temptation*. It puts the *Child* upon Shifts and Tricks, many times diſhoneſt ones, to ſupply his Neceſſities: This is doubtleſs a common Effect of it. The Hardneſs of Parents has often put Men upon unlawful Courſes, which when they are once acquainted with, they perhaps never leave, tho' the firſt Occaſion ceaſes: Wherefore Parents ought to beware how they run them upon theſe Hazards. Beſides, the Parent loſes that Contentment which he might have in ſeeing his Children live proſperouſly and comfortably, which none but an arrant *Earth-worm* would exchange, for the vain imaginary Pleaſure of having Mony in his *Cheſt*. There is yet another thing to be heeded by *Parents*, in providing for their *Children*, which is, that they get honeſtly what they make their Portion; elſe 'tis very far

far from being a *Proviſion.* There is ſuch a Curſe goes along with an ill-gotten Eſtate, that he who leaves ſuch a one to his Child, does but cheat and deceive him; makes him believe he has left him Wealth, but has withal put ſuch a Canker in the Bowels of it, as is ſure to eat it out. This is ſo common an Obſervation, that one need ſay nothing to confirm the Truth of it. Would God it were as generally laid to Heart, as it ſeems to be generally taken notice of; Parents wou'd then ſurely not account it a reaſonable Motive to unjuſt dealing, that they may thereby provide for their *Children.* This is not a way of providing for them; 'tis the way to ſpoil them of whatever they have lawfully gather'd for them; The leaſt Mite of unlawful *Gain* being of the Nature of Leaven, which ſours the whole *Lump*, bringing down Curſes upon all a Man poſſeſſes. Let all Parents then ſatisfy themſelves with ſuch Proviſions for their Children, as God ſhall enable them honeſtly to make, aſſuring themſelves, how little ſoever it be, 'tis a better Portion than the greateſt Wealth unjuſtly gotten. They muſt not let the Care of providing *Fortunes* for their *Children*, make them Negligent in the Care of their Souls Concerns: always minding, that a good *Example* teaches better than *Precept*, eſpecially where the Perſon is one to whom we bear a Reverence, or with whom we have a continual Converſation, both which uſually meet in a *Parent.* It is therefore a moſt neceſſary Care in all *Parents*, to behave themſelves ſo before their *Children*, that their *Pattern* may be a Means of winning them to *Virtue.* But alas! this Age affords little of this Care; it is ſo far from it, that there are none more frequently the Inſtruments of corrupting *Children*, than their own *Parents*; and indeed how can it be otherwiſe? while Men give themſelves Liberty to all Wickedneſs, 'tis not to be hop'd, but that the Children which obſerve it, will imitate it. The *Child* that ſees his *Father* drunk, will ſurely think he may be ſo too as well as his *Father:* So he who hears him ſwear, will do the like; and 'tis the

ſame in other *Vices*. If any Parent that is thus wicked himſelf, ſhould happen to have ſo much more Care of his *Child*'s Soul than his own, as to forbid him the Things which himſelf practiſes, or correct him for the doing them; 'tis certain, the Child will account this a great Injuſtice in his Father, to puniſh him for that which himſelf freely does, and ſo he is never likely to be wrought upon by it. This Conſideration lays a moſt ſtrict *Tie* upon all *Parents* to live Chriſtianly, for otherwiſe they do not only hazard their own Souls, but thoſe of their Children alſo, and as it were, purchaſe an Eſtate of Inheritance in *Hell*.

Parents ſhou'd, by daily and earneſt Prayers, recommend their *Children* to God's Protection and Bleſſing, and be in their own Perſons ſo Pious, that a Bleſſing may deſcend from them upon their Poſterity. This is often promis'd in Scripture to godly Men, their *Seed ſhall be bleſſed*. Thus in the ſecond Commandment God promiſes *to ſhew Mercy to the thouſandth Generation of them that love him and keep his Commandments*. And it is very obſervable in the *Jews*, that tho' they were a ſtiff neck'd Generation, and had very grievouſly provok'd God, yet the Righteouſneſs of their Forefathers, *Abraham*, *Iſaac*, and *Jacob*, did many times move God to ſave them from Deſtruction. On the other ſide, we ſee that even good Men have far'd the worſe for the Iniquity of their *Fathers*. Thus when *Joſiah* had deſtroy'd *Idolatry*, reſtor'd God's Service, and done Good beyond all the *Kings* that were before him; yet there was an old Arrear of *Manaſſeh* his Grandfather, which this Piety of his could not blot out, but God reſolves to caſt *Judah alſo out of his Sight*. If therefore *Parents* have any Kindneſs towards their *Children*, any real Deſire of their Proſperity, let them take care by their own godly Life, to entail a Bleſſing upon them.

Something has been obſerv'd of the Uſe of the Power of *Parents* over their *Children*, that it ſhou'd be by *Equity* and *Moderation*. To which may be added, that they ſhould not oppreſs them with unreaſonable Commands, only to exerciſe

exerciſe their own Authority, but in all things of weight, to conſider the real Good of their Children, and to preſs them to nothing which may not conſiſt with that. As far as this Rule relates to the Marriage of their Children, I cannot forbear ſaying, that many, who have been otherwiſe good *Parents*, have in this been exceedingly to blame. Out of an Eagerneſs of beſtowing them *wealthily*, they force them to marry againſt their Inclinations, which is a great Tyranny, and frequently betrays them to a multitude of Miſchiefs; ſuch as all the Wealth in the World cannot repair. There are two things which *Parents* ought eſpecially to conſider in the matching their *Children*; how they may live *Chriſtianly*, and how they may live *Comfortably*. They muſt chooſe a Virtuous and Pious Perſon to link them with; and tho' a Competency of *Eſtate* may be neceſſary to be regarded, yet ſurely Abundance is no way requiſite, and for that reaſon ſhould not be too vehemently ſought after. What much more tends to the Happineſs of the State, is the mutual Kindneſs and Liking of the *Parties*, without which Marriage is of all other the moſt uncomfortable Condition; and therefore no *Parent* ought to thruſt a *Child* into it. Theſe Conſiderations of the *Duty* of *Parents* to their *Children*, have Relation to thoſe of both Sexes. But ſince the *Daughters* fall more eſpecially under the *Mothers* Care, it may not be improper to apply a Word or two to the Parent, with particular Regard to them. *Softneſs* is a Fault which Ladies are generally bred up with, and which not a few take a great deal of *Pride* in. This yet is attended with abundance of very bad Conſequences: And they that are thus bred, are ſure to create, in the future courſe of their Life, much Uneaſineſs and Trouble, both to themſelves and to all that are about them; they being made by it incapable, for ever afterwards, of a firm and regular Conduct, and ſo muſt needs fall into a great number of Miſtakes and Extravagances, which will be apt to expoſe them to Scorn and Ridicule. The tender Sap, as it is called, is thus in the greateſt of Dangers from an

exceſs of Tenderneſs, if not betimes ſecured againſt it by a prudent *Education:* Wherefore it is a fatal Error to bring up Girls with ſuch a Delicateneſs and Timorouſneſs, as are ordinarily cheriſh'd in thoſe of better Quality; ſince they are hereby incapacitated for a Life of Reaſon and Virtue, and can never expect to be happy under any Circumſtances whatſoever. You may obſerve that there is commonly a great deal of *Affectation* in this at firſt ſight, as there is afterwards of *Habit*. How affected often are thoſe *Tears* which they bring forth at ſo cheap a Rate? And how eaſily do they get a Cuſtom of *weeping* upon every Occaſion as they pleaſe? You may diſcern in ſome of them a ſort of a diſguis'd Pleaſure to appear ſtartled almoſt at every thing, and to impoſe upon others as if they were frighted indeed: And in theſe ill-grounded Fears, which were at firſt put on affectedly, they grow at length ſo habituated by *Cuſtom*, as never to be free from their *Torment*, whence they are preſently diſorder'd by every petty Accident, and run away from a *Shadow*, as if they were out of their *Wits*. Now the Contempt of ſuch *Affectations* may ſerve much to correct them; and ſince *Vanity* has therein ſo great a part, you can never do better than to laugh them out of this *Folly*, and to repreſent to them all ſuch Practices as ridiculous and as deſpicable as they are in themſelves.

It is neceſſary, in like manner, to repreſs in them betimes, all paſſionate *Loves*, little *Jealouſies*, exceſſive *Compliments* and *Flatteries*, ſtrange *Tranſports*. All this ſpoils them, and teaches them to look on whatever is *Grave* and *Serious*, as too *Dry* and *Sour*. It is alſo expedient to try to make them ſtudy how to ſpeak always in as ſhort and conciſe a manner as they can: True Wit conſiſts in retrenching all uſeleſs Diſcourſe, and in ſaying a *great deal* in a *few Words*; whereas moſt *Women* ſay *little* in a *great many*; they take Eaſineſs of Speech and Vivacity of Imagination for Wit; they never uſe themſelves to chooſe their Thoughts; they put them not into Order, with reſpect to what they are to ſpeak about. They are generally

generally paſſionate in almoſt every thing they ſay; and no wonder if Paſſion makes them talk a great deal too much. In the mean while nothing very good can ever be expected from a *Woman*, unleſs ſhe be brought to conſider before ſhe ſpeaks what is to follow next; to examine well her Thoughts, to explain them after a ſhort and eaſy manner, and that done, to be able to hold her peace.

There is another thing which contributes very much to the long-winded Diſcourſes of moſt Women, which is, that they are *Artificial*, and uſe long Windings and Fetches to come to their Point, as being taken much with a little ſort of Craftineſs and pretty Cunning, by which they think to arrive at their Ends. And how ſhou'd they not be taken therewith, if they have been *educated* to know no better, and have not been inſtructed in another ſort of Prudence? ſince this is the firſt thing that Example and bad *Education* have taught them. This *Artificialneſs* is attended with ſome very dangerous Conſequences, and therefore ought to be carefully corrected by Simplicity and *Frankneſs*, which have certain Charms in them that win our Confidence, beyond all the Arts in the World.

Women have beſides a natural Flexibleneſs, ſo as to be able to act any Part. Tears coſt them nothing, their Paſſions are quick, and their Knowledge exceeding ſhort and limited. Hence it is, they neglect no means by which they think they can ſucceed; and thoſe means, which wou'd not be lik'd by Perſons of a more regular Temper, appear to them both lawful and good. They hardly ever take the Pains to examine whether ſuch a thing is to be deſir'd, but are always very induſtrious to attain it. Beſides, they are Baſhful, and full of *falſe Modeſty*, which is alſo a Spring of Diſſimulation. The means of preventing ſo great a Miſchief as this, is to avoid carefully the putting them on any Neceſſity for it; and to accuſtom them to ſpeak frankly and ingenuouſly what they think, as to all lawful Matters. They ſhould be at liberty to teſtify freely their diſlike, when they

are

are diſpleaſed: They ſhould not be forc'd to appear as if they had a liking for ſome Perſons, or for ſome Books, which in reality they have not.

When they are ſo unhappy as to have got an Habit of diſguiſing their Opinions, the way to let them ſee the *Folly* of it, is to inſtruct them ſolidly in the *Maxims* of true *Prudence:* As the Means of diverting their *Reliſh* from the frivolous Fictions of *Romances*, is to give them a true Taſte of uſeful and delightful *Hiſtories*. If you allow them not a regular *Curioſity*, they will have a diſorderly one; and if you do not form their *Minds* to *true Prudence*, they will adhere to the *falſe*, which is *Craft*.

Shew them by *Examples*, that without Deceitfulneſs we may be Diſcreet, Cautious, and Diligent in the lawful ways of gaining our Point: Tell them, that the principal part of *Prudence* conſiſts in ſpeaking little, in conſidering the Proportion of the *Means* to the End, and in being more diffident of ourſelves than of others; but not in making feign'd Diſcourſes, and ſhifting of Perſons. Uprightneſs of Conduct, and the univerſal Reputation of *Probity*, attract more Confidence and Eſteem, and conſequently at the long run, procure more Advantages, even in temporal Matters, than winding and crooked Methods.

Make them ſee how much this judicious Probity does diſtinguiſh Parents, and render them fit for the greateſt Undertakings. And on the other hand ſhew them how contemptible is all that which *Craft* does ſeek after; it being either a Trifle that one dares not ſpeak for, or elſe it is a pernicious *Paſſion*. When we wiſh for that which we ought to wiſh for, we deſire it openly, and ſeek for it by the right ways, and with Moderation. What is there more ſweet, more eaſy, or more convenient, than to be ſincere, open hearted, always quiet, always at Peace with ourſelves and others, and have nothing to fear or to invent? whereas diſſembling Perſons are continually in Agitation, in Remorſe, in Danger, and in the deplorable Neceſſity of covering one *Craft* by an hundred others.

Beſides,

Beſides, with all this ſhameful Uneaſineſs, Perſons of a crafty Temper can never avoid thoſe very Inconveniences which they labour to ſhun: Sooner or later they are known for what they really are. If in ſome particular Caſes they may over reach the greateſt part of thoſe they may have to deal with, yet they cannot do it in the main Actions of their Life; they are by one thing or other always found out; and very commonly they are alſo caught by thoſe very Perſons they deſign'd to put upon. Some make a ſhew of being dazzled by them, that they may ſee their Tricks the better, and ſo they believe themſelves eſteem'd, while they are but deſpis'd: But if they ſhould prove ſomewhat lucky, at beſt they are ſure to lie under Suſpicions. They warn Mankind to ſtand upon their Guard. People will be as much afraid of their Company as if they had the *Plague*; and whether the Diſeaſe be real or imaginary, there is no Phyſick that will be able to cure it. Upon this you ought to preſs them to conſider, what can be more contrary to the Advantages, which a Prudent Love of one's ſelf ought to aim at, than to ſee one's ſelf always ſuſpected by every one. Diſcover theſe things to 'em by little and little, according to the Occaſions, the Needs, and the Capacity of the *Tempers* you have to deal with. Obſerve alſo to them, that *Craft* proceeds always from a mean *Spirit*. We are *crafty* and *tricking* only when we deſire to be conceal'd: either not being ſuch as we ought to be, and deſigning what we ought not to deſign; or elſe when deſigning lawful Matters, we take yet unworthy or unlawful Means to accompliſh them, and this for want of knowing thoſe that are Worthy and Honourable. Tho' the latter betrays indeed a greater Weakneſs of Spirit, yet there is the ſame Littleneſs of Soul in both of theſe; but nothing is ſo much to be pity'd as the Proſecution of what is lawful by unlawful Courſes.

Teach Children betimes to obſerve the Impertinence of any little Crafty *Tricks* which they ſee practis'd, with the Contempt which they deſervedly bring on thoſe who commit

commit them, and be ſure to make them aſham'd of themſelves, whenever you catch them in any thing that is like *Diſſembling*. You will do well to deprive them from Time to Time of that which they love, if they ſeek to come at it by *Craft*, but then declare they ſhall have it when they ask for it plainly. Neither be afraid of bearing with their little Infirmities, but give them the Courage of letting you ſee them, which elſe it may be an hard Task to diſcover. Shame when wrong plac'd, is a very dangerous Miſchief, and can hardly be cur'd, and if not taken heed to, will render all the reſt incurable.

Teach them the folly of thoſe wretched Subtleties and Shifts, by which ſome contrive to have others deceiv'd: But in ſuch a ſort as they think they ſhall be able to ſatisfy their own Conſciences, that they did not deceive them. There is even greater Baſeneſs, and fouler Play in theſe *Refinings*, than there is in the very common Cheats; the others make comparatively an honeſt Practice, if one may ſo ſay, of *Craft*, but theſe add to it a new diſguiſe, the better to authoriſe it: Tell them that *God* is *Truth* itſelf, and therefore to play with Truth is all one as to play with God; that they ought to be ſtrictly punctual and exact in their Words, and to ſpeak but little, that nothing may be ſpoken by them but what is fit, and with reſpect always had to the ſtrict *Truth*.

For this Reaſon a particular Care muſt be taken not to imitate thoſe who fondly applaud Children, when they obſerve them to ſhew a kind of *Wit* in ſome petty Craft. On the contrary, you muſt be ſo far from commending in them thoſe little *Tricks*, as Inſtances of their *Wit*, that you moſt rather ſeverely chide them upon all ſuch Occaſions, and overthrow all their *Artifices*, meerly becauſe they are ſo, that experience may leave in them a diſguſt for thoſe Contrivances for the future. By praiſing them for ſuch Faults, as the manner is generally, it is not ſtrange if they become at laſt perſuaded, that to be *prudent* and to be *crafty* are all one. But to come particularly to the Duty of a *Mother* in the Education

cation of her Daughter, I ſhall give ſome Directions which I met with in the Writings of a very Eminent *Prelate*.

1. Be ſure to ſtudy well her *Conſtitution* and her *Genius*.
2. Follow Nature, and proceed eaſily and patiently.
3. Suffer not Servants to terrify her with Stories of *Ghoſts* and *Goblins*.
4. Uſe not Monſtrous Fictions to divert her with, but either ingenious *Fables* or real *Hiſtories*.
5. Give her a fine pleaſing Idea of *Good*, and an ugly frightful one of *Evil*.
6. Keep her to a good and natural Regimen of *Diet*.
7. Obſerve ſtrictly the little Seeds of *Reaſon* in her, and cultivate the firſt Appearances of it diligently.
8. Watch over her Childiſh *Paſſions* and *Prejudices*, and labour ſweetly to cure her of them.
9. Never uſe any little *diſſembling* Arts, either to pacify her, or to perſuade her to any thing you would have her.
10. Win her to be in Love with *Openneſs* in all her *Acts* and *Words*, and fail not to inſtil into her an Abhorrence of all *Serpentine* Wit.
11. If ſhe be a brisk witty *Child*, do not *applaud* her too much.
12. If ſhe be a dull heavy *Child*, do not diſcourage her at all.
13. Seem not to admire her *Wit*, but rather ſtudy by all Means to rectify her Judgment.
14. Endeavour to fortify her *Reaſon* early, and be ſure to avoid the inflaming of her *Imagination*.
15. Uſe her to put little *Queſtions*, and give her as proper and ſhort *Anſwers* as you can.
16. Put *Queſtions* yourſelf to her, as it were in *Play*, and encourage her to *anſwer* you.
17. Slip no Occaſion to fore-arm her well againſt the Vanity of *preſuming* and *pretending*.
18. Inſinuate into her the *Principles* of *Politeneſs* and true *Modeſty*, and Chriſtian Humility.

19. Per-

19. Permit her not to *mimick* Perſons, nor pleaſe her with *ridiculing* Things.

20. Let her not have any bad *Examples* to converſe with, either among the Servants, or among her Companions and Play-fellows.

21. Try by all Means to make her in Love betimes with Perſons of *Honour* and *Virtue*, and propoſe them to her *Imitation* in ſuch a Manner as may be moſt grateful.

22. Before all things inculcate upon her that moſt honourable Duty and Virtue of *Sincerity*.

23. Be ſure to poſſeſs her with the Baſeneſs and Vileneſs of telling a *Lye* on any Account.

24. Make her ſenſible of the great Evil and Danger of *Cowardiſe*.

25. Fail not to make her ſee the Weakneſs of many *Womaniſh* Arts and Manners, that ſhe be not unawares corrupted or beguiled by them.

26. Shew her the Unreaſonableneſs and Deformity of *Rage* and *Anger*.

27. Set before her the ſeveral Exceſſes of all the *rougher Paſſions* in the moſt ugly Shapes that you can.

28. Set alſo before her the fooliſh Tranſports of the *ſofter Paſſions*, to be laught at by her.

29. Be diligent in obſerving the firſt Appearances of *Evil* in her, and do all that in you lies to check the very *buddings* of *Vice* and *Folly*.

30. Study well the Rules of *indirect* Inſtruction, and apply them ſolidly on every Occaſion.

31. Acquaint her, in the moſt pleaſantand inſinuating Manner, with the *Sacred Hiſtory*, nor let it ſeem her *Leſſon* but her *Recreation*.

32. Inſtil in like Manner into her the Principles of *true Religion* according to her Capacity, in the moſt familiar and diverting way.

33. Give her, or rather *draw* from her, ſolid and plain Proofs of the Diſtinction between *Soul* and *Body*; of the *Exiſtence* and *Spirituality* of *God*, of his *Attributes* and *Perfections*, of the *Creation* of the *World*, of the

Soul's

Soul's *Immortality*, of the Original and Nature of *Sin*, of the Neceſſity of *Grace*, of the *Covenant* in *Chriſt*, and of future *Rewards* and *Puniſhments*.

34. Set before her the Goſpel in its *Simplicity* and *Purity*, and the great Examples of *Antiquity* unſophiſticated.

35. Fence her prudently againſt *Superſtition*, and the Abuſes and Corruptions that are every where crept into *Religion*.

36. Explain to her the Nature and Obligation of the *Baptiſmal Vow*.

37. Prepare her in the beſt Manner for *Confirmation*.

38. Animate her, and inſtruct her for the holy *Communion*.

39. Particularly inform her in the Duties of a *ſingle* and *marry'd* State.

40. Tutor her in all that relates to *Marriage*, as an holy Ordinance of God, for the forming of *Saints*.

41. Teach her with all *Gentleneſs* to remark the ſeveral *Faults* and *Miſtakes*, which are by Women of all Ranks commonly committed in their Conduct of Life, and how ſhe is to guard herſelf againſt them.

42. Make her acquainted, if ſhe be to live at *Court*, with the *Miſtakes* in Life there committed, and the proper *Duties* that will be required of her in ſuch a *State*.

43. Let her be prepar'd for the *Duties* and *Employments* of a *City-life*; if her Lot ſhou'd be among the Citizens.

44. See ſhe be inform'd aright in all that belongs more nearly to a *Country-life*, if ſhe be likely to live at a Diſtance from City and Court.

45. Diſcreetly check her longing Deſires after Things pleaſant, and uſe her to frequent Diſappointments.

46. Inſtruct her thoroughly in the general Principles and Rules of *Juſtice* and Equity, and accuſtom her to apply them.

47. Shew her wherein the true *Wit* and true *Decorum* do conſiſt, and how to diſtinguiſh them from the counterfeit and affected.

48. Make

48. Make her underſtand the *True* and *Falſe* Modeſty, and the Danger of being impos'd on by *this* under the Maſk of *that*.

49. Take care to fence her againſt the Perils of *Curioſity*, and eſpecially againſt all ſuperſtitious Enquiries concerning what is Future.

50. Put her upon the Exerciſe and Practice of Religion and Virtue, in ſuch Inſtances as her Underſtanding and Age are capable of.

51. Let her be inſtructed to do every thing *ſeaſonably* and in *Order*.

52. Whatever ſhe is ſet to do, let her ſtudy to do it well, and peaceably, and quietly.

53. Teach her to improve every thing, that nothing may be loſt or waſted.

54. Permit her not to hurry herſelf about any thing.

55. Let her always be employ'd about what is *Profitable* or *Neceſſary*.

56. Let nothing of what is committed to her Care, be ſpoil'd thro' her Neglect.

57. Let her *eat* deliberately, chew well, drink in moderate Proportions, and at ſeveral Times in the middle of a Meal, rather than once largely.

58. Let not her Appetite be forc'd with Wines, Pickles, or Sauces.

59. Let her not eat or drink *preſently* after Exerciſe, or when ſhe is hot, nor let her uſe Exerciſe either of *Body* or *Mind* too ſoon after a Meal.

60. Let her uſe *Exerciſe* in the Morning, give over a little before Dinner, and alſo in the Evening before Supper.

61. Let her pleaſe her own Fancy in it, but always ſecure Decency; never let her be violent at it, or continue it too long.

62. Uſe her to riſe betimes in the Morning, and ſet before her in the moſt winning and eaſy Manner, an Order for the whole Day, yet ſo as it may not appear to be a *Task* impos'd, but rather a *delightful* Management of Time.

63. Sweetly

63. Sweetly remonſtrate to her, how abſurd it is for an Immortal Spirit of an *Heavenly* Original, to be a Drudge in the Affairs of the Body, or to ſink down into the *Earth*, and its Pleaſure.

64. Repreſent to her the noble Simplicity of the Ancients in their *Habits*, in their *Food*, and in their Manners.

65. Endeavour to inſpire her with a prudent Neglect of her *Outward* ſelf, and of all things without.

66. Let her be acquainted with the true value of Things, and the Subordination that is both in Nature and Grace.

67. Let her learn the Art of *being ſerv'd*, and be perfectly well inſtructed in the Rules of *Chriſtian Oeconomy*.

68. Teach her to diſtinguiſh the Order, Compoſition, Ornaments, and Beauties of the *Mind*, and to give them their due Place with reſpect to thoſe of the *Body*, to which they are ſo vaſtly Superior.

69. Give her to underſtand how every *Outward* Beauty proceeds from an *Inward* Order and Harmony, and ſhew her withal how both the *Inward* and *Outward* Beauties may be advanced by a proper Method.

70. See ſhe be furniſh'd well with the *true* Maxims of Nobility and Honour, and be ſufficiently habituated to diſtinguiſh them from the falſe ones.

When *Wiſdom* enters into her Heart, and *Knowledge* is made Pleaſant to her *Soul*, *Diſcretion ſhall preſerve her, and Underſtanding ſhall keep her.*

Theſe Directions are ſo juſt, and ſo particular, that they are of themſelves ſufficient to govern a *Mother*'s Conduct; but ſtill there is ſo much depending on the good Diſcharge of that *Duty*, that one cannot enlarge too much upon it, and therefore I have theſe further Conſiderations to offer.

A *Mother* is a Title of ſuch *Tenderneſs*, that we find it borrow'd by our common *Dialect* to expreſs the moſt exuberant *Kindneſs*; it has the ſame Uſe even in *Sacred Writ*, and is often ſet as the higheſt Example our Weakneſs

neſs can comprehend, of the Divine *Compaſſion*. *Nature* has ſufficiently ſecur'd the *Love* of *Mothers* to their *Children*, without the aid of any poſitive Law: Yet we find this, as other *Inſtincts* of *Nature*, is ſometimes violated, and oftner perverted and apply'd to miſtaken Purpoſes; the one by the *Defect* of *Love*, the other by an Imprudent *Exceſs* of it: The *Defect* does, I preſume, more rarely occur than the other; yet ſometimes it does happen, and that either from a moroſe *Sourneſs* of *Humour*, or elſe from too vehement an Attention on ſomething elſe.

Some *Women* have ſuch a Ruggedneſs of *Nature*, that they can *Love* nothing; the ugly Paſſions of *Anger* and *Envy* have, like *Pharaoh*'s lean Kine, eat up the more amiable of *Love* and *Joy*. *Plato* was wont to adviſe crabbed, auſtere *Tempers* to ſacrifice to the *Graces*; and ſuch as theſe had need have a great deal of Chriſtian *Philoſophy*, to allay and ſweeten their native Bitterneſs. Others there are who are not void of the Affection of *Love*, but 'tis foreſtalled by ſome other Object, and diverted from their *Children*; and 'tis a little to be doubted, that the Object, which ſo diverts it, is none of the beſt; for the Wiſdom of God has diſpos'd all *Duties* into ſuch a Harmony and Conſent of Parts, that one interferes not with another; if we *Love* no one prohibited thing, all the regular *Objects* of our Kindneſs will agree well enough, and one need never ſupplant another. Indeed 'tis oft obſervable, that thoſe *Women*, who immoderately love their own Pleaſures, do leaſt regard their *Children*; they look on them as *Clogs* to keep them within Doors, and turn them off to the Care of a *Nurſe* or *Maid*, while perhaps a *Dog* or a *Monkey* is thought worthy their own Attendance.

Plutarch relates a Sarcaſm of *Ceſar*'s to ſome Foreigners whom he ſaw at *Rome*, ſtrangely fond of ſuch little Animals, and asked them, *Whether the Women in their Country had no Children?* Intimating by it, how unreaſonable it was for thoſe that had, to beſtow their Careſſes on ſuch Creatures. And ſurely he would not have given

a milder Reprimand to ſome of our *Ladies*, who not only pleaſe but pride themſelves in thoſe little Brutes, ſhewing them to all *Comers*; when perhaps you may converſe with them ſeveral Days, before you ſhall by any mention of theirs know that they have a *Child*.

This *Defect* of Love many are apt to impute to the *Mother*'s Tranferring the *Nurſing* her Child to another; I rather think it is taken up as a piece of State and Greatneſs; for no other Motive but what is founded in their *Quality*, could ſo univerſally prevail with all that are of it. But ſure this is one of the vain *Punctilios* with which this Age abounds. For whatever Rank the *Mother* is of, the *Child* bears a Proportion to it, and there is the ſame Equality between the greateſt *Lady* and her own *Child*, as is between the meaneſt *Beggar* and hers; though indeed if there were any Condeſcenſion in it, the Averſions of that ought not to outweigh the Impulſes of *Nature*, and the many Advantages the *Child* may receive by taking its *Nouriſhment* whence it deriv'd its *Subſtance*. Wherefore, tho' I will not be too poſitive in aſſerting the Neceſſity, yet I confeſs I cannot but look with *Reverence* upon thoſe few Perſons of *Honour*, who have broken thro' an unreaſonable *Cuſtom*, and preferr'd the good of their *Children*, before that fantaſtick Privilege of Greatneſs. Such muſt with all Juſtice be acknowledg'd to have given a much better Evidence of their *Love* to their *Children*, than the others.

There is a fine Diſcourſe on this Subject in the fourteenth Book of *A. Gellius*, where *Favorinus* the *Philoſopher* is introduced, perſuading a noble *Lady*, notwithſtanding the uſual Excuſes, to Nurſe her *Child*; and the Counteſs of *Lincoln* wrote a little Book on the ſame Subject, call'd her *Nurſery*, full of fine Argument, and capable of *Convincing* any Body that is capable of *Conviction*. However, let theſe delicate ones conſider the ſevere Words of the Prophet, *The Sea Monſters draw out the Breaſt, they give ſuck to their young ones; the Daughter of my People is become cruel, like the Oſtrich in the Wilderneſs,*

who

who is harden'd againſt her young ones, as tho' they were not hers; her Labour is in vain without Fear, becauſe God hath deprived her of Wiſdom, neither hath he imparted to her Underſtanding.

But as there may be a Fault in the *Defect*, ſo there may be alſo in the *Exceſs* of *Love*. *God* is the only unlimited Object of our *Love*; towards all others 'tis eaſy to become inordinate, and in no Inſtance more than in this of *Children*. The *Love* of a *Parent* is deſcending, and all things move moſt violently downwards; whereas that of *Children* to their *Parents* commonly needs a *Spur*, this of the *Parent* often needs a *Bridle*, eſpecially that of the *Mother*, which by ſtrength of feminine Paſſion does uſually exceed the *Love* of the *Father*. Now to regulate this Affection, ſhe is to obſerve theſe two Rules, That ſhe hurts not herſelf by it, and that ſhe does not hurt her Children. She is in danger of hurting herſelf by it, if ſhe ſuffers *human* Affection to ſwell beyond its Banks, ſo as to come in any Competition with the *Divine*; this is to make an *Idol* of her *Child*, for every thing is ſo to us, which rivals the Love of *God* in our Hearts; and he who owns the Title of a *Jealous God*, may be provoked, as well by the bowing of ourſelves to a *Living* Image, as the Proſtration of our Bodies to a *dead*; accordingly we often ſee the Effects of his Jealouſy in this particular. The doting Affection of the *Mother* is frequently puniſh'd with the untimely Death of the *Children*; or if not with that, 'tis many times with a ſeverer Scourge, they live *to grieve her Eyes and to conſume her Heart*, to be ruinous to themſelves, and Afflictions to their Friends, and to force their unhappy *Mothers* to that ſad Exclamation, *Bleſſed are the Wombs which bare not.*

And as this proves often true, when the *Dotage* is general upon all the *Children*, ſo does it oftner, when 'tis partial and fix'd upon any one; that *Darling* which ſhe makes the only Object of her *Joy*, uſually becomes that of her *Sorrow*. It is an ordinary Infirmity in *Parents*, to

heap

heap all their Kindneſs upon *One*, to the defrauding of the reſt; and too many times upon very undue Motives; a little excelling in point of *Beauty* turns the *Scale*, when perhaps many more ſolid Excellencies are the *Counterpoiſe*. And ſurely this is not only *unjuſt* but *irrational* in a *Parent*; for all Peculiarity of Favour in a Superior, ſhould be diſpenſed either by way of Reward or Encouragement, and neither of theſe Ends can take place, where only the outward Form is conſider'd; for that cannot be rewardable to which the Party has contributed nothing, and our *Saviour* tells us, *None can add a Cubit to his Stature*, nor make one Hair White or Black: 'Tis certain themſelves cannot do either, though by the help of artificial Hypocriſy they frequently appear to do both.

The only juſtifiable Ground of Partiality to *Children* is their Virtue, for to that their own Choice concurs, and ſo may intitle them to Reward; and 'tis alſo in their Power to advance, and ſo Encouragements are not caſt away upon them; nay, the Influences of thoſe may extend farther, and provoke a virtuous Emulation in the reſt. But then the Mother muſt ſo manage it, as to evidence, that 'tis no Inequality in her own Inclination, but merely the Force of the others Deſert, not the Perſon but the Goodneſs that biaſſes her; and when Virtue is known to be the only ingratiating Quality, they will at once learn the way to become hers and God's Favourites. Unleſs it be upon this one Deſign, 'tis a very unſafe thing for a *Parent* to make any partial Diſcrimination among *Children*, which is ſure to tempt the more neglected both to repine at her and envy her *Darlings*. Such Seeds of Rancour have often been by that Means ſow'd in *Children*, as could not be eradicated in their riper Years. Nor is the Miſchief leſs which ſhe does to her *Fondlings*, who beſides that they are expos'd to the Malice of the reſt, are uſually ſpoil'd by it, made inſolent and untractable perhaps their whole Lives after; for where the *Mother*'s Affection is unbridled, commonly

the

the *Child*'s Will is ſo too; her Fondneſs ſuperſeding that Diſcipline and Correction which ſhould, as the Wiſe Man ſpeaks, *bow down its Neck from its Youth*. The like may be ſaid where the Indulgence is more Univerſal to all the *Children*, which is in one reſpect worſe than the Partial, becauſe it ſpoils more, not one or two, but all the Brood; the doting Love of a *Mother* blinds her Eyes that ſhe cannot ſee their Faults, manacles her Hands that ſhe cannot chaſtiſe them, and ſo their Vices are permitted to grow up with themſelves; as their Joints knit and gather Strength, ſo do their ill Habits, till at laſt they are confirm'd into an Obſtinacy; and what Recompenſe can the little Blandiſhments and Careſſes of a Mother make her Children, for ſuch important, ſuch deſtructive Miſchiefs? She therefore who will be really kind, muſt temper her Indulgence with a prudent Severity, or elſe ſhe eminently violates the ſecond Rule, by which ſhe ſhould regulate her Love, and does that to her Children which *Jacob* fear'd from his Father, *brings a Curſe upon them and not a Bleſſing*. Indeed the beſt way of approving their Love, is by well diſcharging the other Branch of their Duty, that of *Care*. Without this, all the moſt paſſionate Raptures of Kindneſs are but an airy Apparition, a fantaſtick *Scene*, and will no more advantage a *Child*, than the whole Shambles in Picture can feed and nouriſh it. Now this *Care* is not a temporary momentary *Duty*, for ſome one critical Inſtant, but is to attend the *Child* thro' the ſeveral Stages of its *Minority*, *Infancy*, *Childhood*, and *Youth*.

The very beſt Part of their *Infancy* is a Seaſon only for thoſe Cares which concern their *Bodies*, providing for their careful Attendance, and all other Things conducing to the ſtrengthening their Conſtitutions, and laying a Foundation for future Health and Vigour; which is their Intereſt, not only upon a Bodily, but upon an Intellectual Account, the good Temperature of the *Body* being a great aid towards the free Operations of the Mind; wherefore *Socrates* and other *Philoſophers* much recommend

mend to their Diſciples the Care of Health, as that which frees the Soul from many Incumbrances in its Purſuit of *Knowledge*. But this Health is not always the Conſequent of a very nice and tender Breeding, but is very oft overthrown by it; and if Ladies could but find in their Hearts to try it, they would, I doubt not, be convinced, that inuring them to moderate Hardſhips would much more conduce to the eſtabliſhing and fortifying their Conſtitutions.

Beyond all this, the Care of their *Exterior* part is ſoon overtaken by a more Important one, that of their *Interior*, in the timing of which there ſeems to be a very common Miſtake in the World. We look upon the ſeven Years of *Infancy*, as the Life merely of an *Animal*, to be ſpent only in the Entertainment of *Senſe*; and as we uſe not to yoke *Calves*, or to back young *Colts*, ſo we think our *Children* are for a while left at the ſame Liberty, to have no Reſtraint to put on any of their Paſſions; ſo far from that, we many times excite and foment them, teach Children to be angry and envious, proud and ſullen, as if we fear'd their natural Propenſions to all theſe were too faint, and wanted the help of Inſtitution: But ſurely this is a great and pernicous Error, and this, ſuppoſing Children to be ſo long Brutes, is the way to make them ſo longer; the Patrons of Atheiſm make it a moſt conſtant Topick in their Diſparagements of Religion, that 'tis owing to the Prejudices infus'd in *Infancy*; 'twere to be wiſh'd, that this Objection might ſo far be comply'd with, that the fear of God, the Love of Virtue, and Hatred of Vice, might have the firſt Poſſeſſion of the Soul, and they be made to moderate their Paſſions, as ſoon as they are in a Capacity to have them excited and engaged.

And truly, if we will obſerve it, we may ſee very early Dawnings of Reaſon in Infants, which would ſooner come to a Brightneſs, if we would betimes ſet to the ſcattering of thoſe Paſſions which eclipſe and darken it. A *Child* will be quickly taught to know what pleaſes and

diſpleaſes a *Parent*, and by very little Taſte of Reward or Puniſhment will learn to do the one and avoid the other; when this is done, the *Parent* has gain'd the fundamental Point, *that of Obedience*, and may ſuperſtruct on it what ſhe pleaſes. It is then her Fault, if the *Child* be not by eaſy and inſenſible Degrees moulded into a right Form; 'tis at firſt all one to a *Child*, whether he name God in an Oath or in his Prayers; but a *Mother*, by puniſhing the one and rewarding the other, will quickly bring him to know there is a Difference, and ſo proportionably in other Inſtances. As to the way of Diſcipline, it may not be amiſs to obſerve, that when there is Occaſion for Severity, 'tis better to awe by actual Puniſhment than by Terror; and never to make uſe of Infinite and Inviſible Affrightments, the beloved Methods of *Nurſes* and *Servants*, ſuch as are the menacing of *Spirits* and *Goblins*, and leaving in the Dark, which often make daſtardly and timorous Impreſſions, ſcarce worn off by a long Age.

A ſober Senſe of things is to be impreſt by gentle Means, and this will be done with moſt Eaſe, both to the *Parent* and the *Child*, the ſooner 'tis ſet upon. The Will of a tender Infant is, like its Limbs, ſupple and pliant, but Time confirms it, and Cuſtom hardens it, and it is a cruel Indulgence to the poor Creature, to let it contract ſuch Habits which muſt coſt him ſo dear the breaking, or dearer if never broken. And if this early *Care* be taken of the *Infancy*, 'twill much eaſe the next Part, that of the *Childhood*; for where the Iron Sinew in the Neck is broken, where the native Stubbornneſs is ſubdu'd ſo early, the Yoke will fit eaſy, all ſucceeding Parts of Diſcipline will come with more Facility and Profit. The Care proper to this Age is the Inſtructing it in all Parts of uſeful Knowledge, of which, as the Divine, both for the Excellency of its Nature and its End, muſt be firſt rank'd, ſo ſhould it be firſt and moſt induſtriouſly cultivated, and by all endearing Methods impreſt, not only in the Underſtanding but in the Heart. Piety and

Virtue

Virtue ſhould be propos'd to Children, as the moſt amiable as well as moſt neceſſary Things, and they ſhould be invited not only to know but to love them.

This Part of Learning is equally competent to both Sexes, and therefore when the Sons are remov'd from under the Mother's *Tuition*, and ſent to more publick Places of *Erudition*, her Province is ſtill the ſame as to her Daughters, to whom ſhe ſhou'd not only Preach, but exemplify it in her own Practice, no Precepts penetrating ſo much into Youth as thoſe that are ſo enforc'd: And in order to this I ſhould commend to Mothers, the being as much with them as they can, and taking the perſonal Inſpection of them; not to turn them off wholly to Servants, no nor yet to Governeſſes, but frequently themſelves to examine how they proceed in the Speculative Part of Knowledge, and no leſs frequently exhort them to the Practice.

Marcus Cato would not let his Son learn of his Slave, as diſdaining a Child ſhould owe ſo conſiderable a Benefit to ſo ſervile a Perſon; and if he thought the meer teaching of Grammar too great a Charge for ſuch a one, ſurely the whole Inſtitution of Youth is a much greater, it being that on which not only a few outward Accompliſhments, but even their Eternity depends. The great *Cornelia* Mother of the *Gracchi*, and *Aurelia* the Mother of *Auguſtus*, thought it worth their Pains to be Governeſſes; and the Truth is, the Soul of a *Child* is a little too precious a Truſt to be committed wholly to the Diligence and Care of a Mercenary *Servant*; or if they happen not to want thoſe Qualifications, yet 'tis very poſſible they may *Prudence*, of which there is no ſmall Degree requiſite to the inſtructing of Youth, too great a Remiſneſs or Severity being equally deſtructive in that Affair. And indeed, beſides theſe immediate, there are ſome other Collateral Benefits conſequent to the *Mother*'s performing that Office, 'twill bring her and her *Children* into an Intimacy and Converſation, give her an Acquaintance with their ſeveral Capacities and

Humours; for want of which many *Parents* have err'd in their Conduct, one ſort of Treatment being not fit for all *Children*, and the diſtinguiſhing that depending wholly on their diſcerning their particular Tempers, which cannot well be done without ſome Converſe with them.

By this they will, beſides, be Witneſſes how they diſpoſe of their Time, that they neither loſe it by doing nothing, nor yet miſemploy it by doing ill. And indeed there is ſcarce any Part of the *Parents* Care more important than this, *Idleneſs* being no farther remov'd from *Vice*, than a Cauſe is from its immediate Effect; wherefore if *Children* be permitted to trifle away their *Time*, they will ſoon learn to trifle away their *Innocence*. 'Tis highly neceſſary then that they be provided of a Succeſſion of Employments, that they may be inſenſibly drawn on by the Variety. Methinks it might very well be contriv'd, that their *Recreations* might ſometimes conſiſt of ſuch ingenious Exerciſes, that they may at once both play and learn.

There is yet another good Effect of the *Mother*'s Preſence with the *Children*, which is perhaps no leſs material than the former. 'Tis, that by this aſſociating them with herſelf, ſhe prevents the Danger of worſe Society; *Children*, if their *Parents* allow them not their Company, are neceſſarily caſt upon that of *Servants*, than which there is ſcarce a greater Danger that attends Youth; for beſides that Low ſort of Converſe debaſes their *Minds*, makes them mean and ſordid, it often corrupts their Manners too; Children uſually not receiving more peſtilent Infuſions from any, than from ſuch Servants who deſiring to ingratiate themſelves, and having no laudable Quality whereby to do it, muſt firſt endeavour to recommend *Vice* to them, and then by their officious Miniſtries in that, have a ready way to introduce themſelves into Favour. Perhaps this will be thought to concern only *Maſculine Children*, and that the *Female*, who are commonly in a diſtinct Apartment, and converſe

verſe only with their own *Sex*, are more ſecure. But I would not adviſe *Mothers* to depend too much on that, for they are no ſurer that their *Daughters* ſhall not converſe with Men, nay, Men of the Meaner ſort too, than that their Maids and Attendants ſhall not do ſo; and when 'tis conſider'd how apt thoſe are to entertain, if not to invite Amours, 'tis not very probable the Rooms where they quarter ſhall be inacceſſible to thoſe they affect; and it were much ſafer for *Children* to be in the publick Converſe of Men, than to be Witneſſes and Obſervers of the private Intrigues of ſuch *Lovers*. The Memories of Youth are very tenacious, and if they once be tainted with any indecent Thing, will at leaſt be apt to recollect it, 'till at laſt perhaps they come to tranſcribe it. 'Tis therefore in this Reſpect a very uſeful Part of the Mother's Care to make herſelf Company to her Daughters, to prevent the Dangers of a more unequal and infectious Converſe.

But if this be Uſeful in Childhood, 'tis no leſs than Neceſſary in the next Period of their Time, when they arrive near the *Growth* and *Age* of *Women*; then indeed the *Mother* ſhould not only make them her Companions but her Friends, allow them ſuch a kind, yet modeſt Freedom, that they may have a Complacence in her Company, and not be tempted to ſeek it among their Inferiors; that the belief of her Kindneſs may ſupplant the Pretenſions of thoſe meaner Sycophants, who by little Flatteries endeavour to ſcrew themſelves into their good Opinion, and become their Confidents, than which there is nothing more Miſchievous; thoſe private Cabals that are held with ſuch, ſerving only to render them Mutinous againſt their *Parents*, ſtill inculcating the one grand Principle of Liberty, a Word ſo charming to our deprav'd Nature, and eſpecially to *Youth*, that they ſhould not be truſted with ſuch Lectures. Beſides, thoſe Intimacies are often Introductions to worſe, many ſcandalous Amours, and unequal Matches having had their Riſe from them. It ſhould therefore be the Buſineſs of

Mothers to prevent all ſuch pernicious Leagues, by pre-engaging them in more ſafe Familiarities, either with themſelves, or ſome other of whoſe Virtue ſhe has Reaſon to be confident.

But the infallible Preſervative againſt this, and all other Miſchiefs, is the bringing them into an Intimacy and Converſation with their *Maker*, by fixing a true Senſe of Religion in their Hearts; if that can be effectually done, 'twill ſuperſede all other *Expedients*. She who duly conſiders ſhe is always in God's Preſence, will want no other Inſpector; nor will ſhe much need Miniſters, who attends to the Advices of her own Conſcience. Neither will it only tend to the ſecuring her Innocence but her Reputation too, Piety being the complete Armour to defend both their Virtue and their Fame. And 'tis extremely neceſſary they ſhould be furniſh'd with it at this Age eſpecially, when they firſt enter into the World, which we may well look on as taking the Field, conſidering how many Aſſaults they are there like to meet with; and if they go without this Armour, they may, none knows how ſoon, be incurably wounded; of which there want not many ſad Inſtances, ſome whereof might probably have been prevented, had the *Parent* taken care to have better fortify'd them.

And indeed 'tis matter of great Lamentation to ſee how much this their moſt important Concern is neglected. Many *Mothers*, who are nicely curious in other Parts of their *Daughters* breeding, are utterly inconſiderate in this; they muſt have all *Civil* Accompliſhments, but they think it matters not whether they have any that are *Chriſtian*; thoſe are excluded out of the Scheme of *Education*, and by that Means lie under the Prejudice of being not only unneceſſary, but ungenteel, below the regard of *Perſons* of Quality. 'Tis much to be fear'd, that this neglect towards their *Children*, is founded in a previous Contempt of *Piety* in themſelves, yet I ſuppoſe 'tis often increas'd by a little *Vanity* they have of

ſeeing

ſeeing them excel in ſome of thoſe Exterior Qualities, which may recommend them to the Humour of the World, upon the improving whereof they are ſo intent, that more material Things are overlook'd; and when thoſe are acquir'd, the Pride of ſhewing them betrays them to other Inconveniences.

The *Mother* oft not only permits, but incites the *Daughter* to the Opportunities of boaſting her Excellencies, ſends her ſo oft abroad on that Deſign, that at laſt perhaps ſhe cannot, when ſhe wou'd, keep her at home, as I believe too many have found Experimentally true. In a word, this Interval between *Childhood* and *Maturity*, is the moſt critical Point of a Woman's Life, and therefore ſhould be the moſt nicely and mainly attended; and a *Mother* had need ſummon not only all her Care and Diligence, but her Prudence too, well to diſcharge this part of her Obligation.

I cannot help obſerving, with reſpect to this Relation of a *Mother*, that thoſe who groan under the Fruſtration of their Hopes, whoſe Children by any ſcandalous Misbehaviour become the Objects of their Shame and Grief, ſhou'd ſoberly conſider whether it has not been ſome way owing to themſelves, either by Neglect in their *Education*, or by their own ill Example. 'Tis uſually one, and ſometimes both. They that upon Recollection can aſſure themſelves 'tis neither, may bear the Affliction with much the greater Chearfulneſs; but they that cannot, I am ſure ought to bear it with much the more Patience and Submiſſion, take it as God's Lecture of *Repentance*, and look on their *Childrens* Faults as the Product of their own. And becauſe Satisfaction is an indiſpenſible Part of *Repentance*, they are with the utmoſt Induſtry to endeavour the repairing thoſe Ruins they have made, by recalling thoſe to Virtue, who by their means have ſtray'd from it. 'Tis true, the Errors of Education, like a ſubtle Poiſon, do ſo mix with the Blood, ſo incorporate into the Humours and Manners, that 'twill be very difficult to check their Effects; and there-

fore the leſs they are themſelves able to do toward it, the more earneſtly they muſt importune a higher Power. He who divided the Light from the Darkneſs, can ſeparate the Effects from the Cauſes, and as he reſtrain'd the natural Property of Fire in the Caſe of the *Three Children*, ſo he only can reſcue their *Children* from that Deſtruction to which their Negligence has expos'd them. But as to the Influence their Example has had, they may do ſomething towards the Redreſs of that, by ſetting them a new Copy, making their own Change ſo viſible, ſo remarkable, that they may have the very ſame means of reclaiming, which there was of ſeducing them. And this is a piece of Juſtice which ſeems to call aloud upon many *Mothers*; the Irregularities of *Youth* could hardly have grown to the preſent height, had they not received Warmth and Shelter from the Practice of their *Elders*; which does at once give Encouragements, and take off Reſtraints: the *Mother* loſing not only her Authority, but her Confidence to Admoniſh or Reprove. With what Face can ſhe require that ſtrict and ſevere Modeſty of a young *Girl*, which ſhe, who ſhould be a *Matron*, will not practiſe? or tye up the giddy wandring Humour of *Youth* within thoſe Bounds ſhe thinks too ſtrait for her own? And how ready a Retortion will even Scripture itſelf afford for ſuch an Impoſer? *Thou that teacheſt another, teacheſt thou not thyſelf?* Let it then be the Care of all *Mothers*, to recommend to their Children all Virtue and Piety by their own Example, that they may contribute ſomething to their Spiritual, as well as their Natural Life. That however they may at leaſt deliver their own Souls, and not have their *Childrens* Guilt recoil upon them, as the unhappy Originals of it.

Having for ſeveral Pages treated of a *Mother*'s Duty, with more particular Reference to her Daughters, let us conſider it a little as it relates to the Sons. She muſt needs much overlook the chief Buſineſs of *Education*, or have had little conſideration for the Conſtitution of Human Nature, that reckons for nothing the firſt Eight or

Ten

Ten Years of a Boy's Life; an Age wherein *Fathers*, who, for that time eſpecially, can neither charge themſelves with the Care of their *Children*, nor be the watchful Inſpectors of thoſe that they muſt be truſted to, who uſually and unavoidably by moſt *Parents*, are a ſort of People far fitter to be *Learners* than *Teachers* of the Principles of Virtue and Wiſdom; the great Foundation of both which, conſiſts in being able to govern our Paſſions, and ſubject our Appetites to the direction of our Reaſon. A Leſſon hardly ever well learnt, if it be not taught us from our very *Cradles:* To do which, requires no leſs than a *Parent's* Care and Watchfulneſs, and therefore ought undoubtedly to be the Mother's Buſineſs to look after it. An Exemption from which, Quality (even of the higheſt Degree) cannot give: Since the Relation between *Mother* and *Child* is equal among all Ranks of People; and it is a very prepoſterous Abuſe of *Quality*, to make it a Pretence for being *Unnatural*. This is a Truth which perhaps would diſpleaſe many *Ladies*, were it told them, and therefore probably it is, that they ſeldom hear it, and not hearing it, they do not underſtand or conſider it; but would they once make trial of it, they would find it would happily reſtrain them from many of their expenſive and ridiculous Diverſions, by engaging them in a laudable Employment, very worthy of the Dignity of their Nature, and moſt agreeable to *Maternal* Tenderneſs.

But for want of due Conſideration, *Women* of *Quality* indulge themſelves in a moſt unnatural Neglect of their *Children*, and are perhaps more without Excuſe for it, than for any other Fault that they are ordinarily taxable with. For tho' it is to be fear'd, that few *Ladies* from the Diſadvantage of their own *Education*, are ſo well fitted as they ought to be, to take the Care of their *Children*, yet not to be willing to do what they can herein, either as thinking this a matter of too much Pains for them, or below their Condition, expreſſes ſo ſenſeleſs a Pride, and ſo much want of the Affection and Com-

paſſion natural to that *Sex* and *Relation*, that one would almoſt be tempted to queſtion, whether ſuch *Women* were any more capable of, than worthy to be the *Mothers* of rational Creatures.

Natural Affection apart, it ſhould be conſider'd by theſe, that no one is born into the World to live idly, enjoying the Fruit and Benefit of other Peoples Labours, without contributing reciprocally ſome way or other to the *good* of the *Community*, anſwerably to that Station wherein God, the common *Father* of all, has placed them, who has evidently intended Human Kind for Society and mutual Communion, as Members of the ſame Body, uſeful every one to each other in their reſpective Places. Now in what can *Women*, whoſe Condition puts them above all the Neceſſities or Cares of a Mean or Scanty Fortune, at once ſo honourably and ſo uſefully, both to themſelves and others, be employ'd, as in looking after the *Education* and *Inſtruction* of their own *Children?* This ſeems indeed to be more particularly the Buſineſs and Duty of ſuch, than of any others. And if Example be neceſſary to perſuade them, that they will not herein do any thing miſ-becoming their Rank, the greateſt *Ladies* among us may be aſſur'd, that thoſe of a Condition ſuperior to theirs, have heretofore been ſo far from thinking it any Abaſement to them to charge themſelves with the *Inſtruction* of their own *Children*, that, to their Immortal Honour, they have made it part of their Buſineſs to aſſiſt in that of other Peoples alſo, who were likely one Day to be of Conſequence to the *Commonwealth*. To inſtance only in the famous *Cornelia* the Mother of the *Gracchi*, and *Aurelia* the Mother of *Auguſtus*, beforemention'd, who did this for the *Sons* of the Noblemen of *Rome*, to whom they had no Relation but that of their *Common Country*. And ſhall not the like Conſideration, or what is infinitely beyond this, that of their *Children* being hereafter for ever happy or miſerable, according as they live in this World, prevail with the *Ladies* of our Days, who call themſelves *Chriſtians*, to

employ

employ ſome of their Time and Pains upon their own *Offspring?* The Care of which, as hath been ſaid, ſhould begin with the firſt Years of *Childrens* Lives, in curbing, at the earlieſt Appearance of it, every the leaſt Inclination to Evil, and accuſtoming them to an abſolute, conſtant and univerſal Submiſſion and Obedience to the Will of thoſe who have the Diſpoſal of them. Since they will hardly ever after, eſpecially in a great Fortune, be govern'd by their own Reaſon, who are not firſt made ſupple to that of others, before they are able to judge of fit and unfit by any other meaſure, than the Direction of ſuch whom they believe to have a juſt Power over them. As they become capable of examining their Actions by Reaſon, they ſhould be taught never to do any thing of Conſequence heedleſly, and to look upon the Dictates of their Reaſon as ſo inviolable a Rule of their Determinations, that no Paſſion or Appetite muſt ever make them ſwerve from it. But inſtead of following this Method, it is commonly thought too ſoon to correct *Children* for any thing, 'till the Seaſon is paſs'd for this ſort of *Diſcipline*, which if it come too late, is commonly ſo far from producing the good it was deſign'd for, that loſing the Benefit of *Correction*, which if duly apply'd is of infinite Uſe, it turns to a *Provocation*, and renders that *Temper* ſtiff and incorrigible which it was meant to ſupple. Nor is it ſeldom that thro' this ill-tim'd *Diſcipline*, together with that Remiſneſs and Inequality, wherewith *Childrens* Inclinations are over-rul'd, their *Parents* Government over them ſeems to them not a natural and juſt Right, eſtabliſh'd for their Benefit, but a Tyrannical and Arbitrary Power, which accordingly they, without Remorſe, diſobey, whenever they believe they can do it with Impunity. And what is ſtill worſe, their evil Diſpoſitions, for the moſt part, are not only not timely enough reſtrain'd, but *Children* are actually taught to indulge to their naturally irregular Inclinations, by thoſe vicious or wretchedly ignorant People who are plac'd about them, and who almoſt univerſally inſtil downright Vice into

into them, even before they can well ſpeak, as *Revenge*, *Covetouſneſs*, *Pride*, and *Envy*; while the ſilly Creatures, who do them ſo unſpeakable Miſchiefs, are ſcarce capable of being made to underſtand the Harm that they do, but think Parents ill-natur'd, or that they have Fancies fit only to be ſmil'd at, who will deny their *Child* a thing for no other Reaſon, it may be, but becauſe he has deſir'd it; and who, before he is truſted to go alone, will check his *Reſentment*, *Impatience*, *Avarice*, or *Vanity*, which they think becomes him ſo prettily, neither will ſuffer him to be rewarded for doing what they bid him to do.

This I am ſure, that whoſo has try'd how very little Senſe is to be met with, or can be infus'd into *Nurſes* and *Nurſe-Maids*, and with what Difficulty even the beſt of them, by thoſe who make it their Buſineſs to watch over them, are reſtrained from what they are perſuaded has no hurt in it, will ſoon be convinced how unfit it is to truſt Children any more than is neceſſary, in ſuch hands. And no wiſer than ſuch, if not much worſe, are the greateſt part of thoſe, who are uſually their immediate Succeſſors, as *Young Scholars*, and *French Menials*, erected into *Tutors* and *Governeſſes*, only for the ſake of a little *Latin* and *French*.

Mr. *Locke*, in his excellent Treatiſe of *Education*, ſhews how early and how great a Watchfulneſs and Prudence are requiſite to the forming the Mind of the *Child* to Virtue; and whoſo ſhall read what he has writ on that Subject, will, it is very likely, think, that few Mothers are qualify'd for ſuch an Undertaking as this: But that they are not ſo, is the Fault which ſhould be amended. However their preſum'd Willingneſs to be in the right, where the Happineſs of their *Children* is concern'd in it, muſt certainly enable them, if they were but convinc'd that this was their Duty, to perform it much better than ſuch People will do, who have as little Skill and Ability for it as themſelves, and who, beſides that they rarely deſire to learn any more than they have, are not induc'd by Affection to do for thoſe under their Care all the good

that

that they can. Since then the Affairs either of Mens *Callings*, or of their private Eſtates, or the Service of their Country, all which are indiſpenſably their Buſineſs, allow them not the leiſure to look daily after the *Education* of their *Children*; and that otherwiſe alſo, they are naturally leſs capable than *Women* of that Complaiſance and Tenderneſs which the right *Inſtruction* and the Weakneſſes alſo of Childhood require; and ſince *Servants* are ſo far from being fit to be rely'd upon in that great Concern, that to watch againſt the Impediments they actually bring thereto, is no ſmall part of the Care that a wiſe Parent has to take; I do preſume that, ordinarily ſpeaking, this ſo neceſſary Work of forming betimes the Minds of *Children*, ſo as to diſpoſe them to be hereafter wiſe and virtuous Men and Women, cannot be well perform'd without the *Mothers* careful Attendance to it. There are not many *Fathers* that are able and willing to give juſt Encouragement to wiſe, virtuous, and well-bred Perſons, to take the place of Parents in governing and inſtructing their Children; beſide, the World doth not abound with ſuch Perſons, and the few that are ſo qualified have Reaſon to hope and ſeek for more profitable Employments; much leſs can thoſe great Numbers who have ſmaller *Eſtates*, afford to reward Perſons of true Worth and Merit for governing their Children. Some ſuch Perſons indeed may be procur'd by Men of high Rank, or great Fortunes, and even they, if they do reward in proportion to the Importance of the Charge, and the Merit of the Tutors, will find the Coſt to be an uneaſy Burden; unleſs they would be content, on this Account, to abridge themſelves of their extravagant Expences, which are uſually the laſt that Men will deny themſelves.

It is indeed wonderful, if we conſider Men as rational Creatures, to ſee how much Mony they will often beſtow, not upon their *Vices* only, for this is not ſo unaccountable, but upon mere faſhionable *Vanities*, which give them more Trouble than Pleaſure in the Enjoyment; yet at the ſame time

time be as ſparing as poſſible, of Coſt upon a *Child*'s Education: If they have but Tutors for their Children, and at eaſy Rates, tho' they be never ſo mean and unworthy, they are ſatisfied; when it is certain, that for Rewards conſiderable enough to make it worth their while, thoſe of a far different Character from ſuch as do for the moſt part undertake it, would be induc'd to accept even the early Charge of *Childrens* Inſtruction. But every Gentleman of a good *Family*, or good *Eſtate* alſo, is not in Circumſtances to propound ſuch ſufficient Rewards; and for what the moſt can afford to give, very few capable of performing this matter well, will trouble themſelves about it, at leaſt with ſuch *Pupils* as muſt be allow'd with *Nurſes* or *Maids*; wherefore no other Remedy I believe can be found but in returning ſtill to our Concluſion, that this great Concernment, on which no leſs than Peoples Temporal and Eternal Happineſs doth mightily depend, ought to be the Care and Buſineſs of *Mothers*. Nor do *Women* ſeem leſs peculiarly adapted by Nature to this Charge, than they are by Duty ſtrongly engaged to it, if the Author of Nature, as no doubt he did, deſign'd this to be their Province in that Diviſion of the Cares of human Life, which ought to be made between a *Man* and his *Wife*; for that Softneſs, Gentleneſs, and Tenderneſs, natural to the *Female* Sex, render them much more capable than Men are of ſuch an inſinuating Condeſcenſion to the Capacities of *Young Children*, as is neceſſary in the Inſtruction and Government of them, inſenſibly to form their early Inclinations; and ſurely theſe diſtinguiſhing *Qualities* of the *Sex* were not given barely to delight, when they may ſo manifeſtly be profitable alſo, if joined with a well-informed Underſtanding; and from *Womens* being naturally thus fitted to take this Care of their *Little* ones it follows, that beſides the Injuſtice done to themſelves thereby, it is neglecting the Direction of Nature for the well Breeding up of *Children*, when *Ladies* are render'd incapable of it, through the want of ſuch due Improvements of their Reaſon as are requiſite to it.

That

That this has been no more reflected upon, from a Principle of *Pity* to that tender Age of *Children*, which ſo much requires *Help*, ſeems very ſtrange; for what can move a juſter Commiſeration, than to ſee ſuch poor *Innocents* ſo far from having the *Aid* they ſtand in need of, that even thoſe who the moſt wiſh to do them good, and who reſent with the deepeſt Compaſſion every little *Malady* that afflicts their *Bodies*, do never attempt to reſcue them from the greateſt Evils which attend them in this Life, but even themſelves aſſiſt to plunge them therein, by cheriſhing in them thoſe Paſſions, which will inevitably render them miſerable? It can never be otherwiſe, while *Women* are bred up in *wrong* Notions of *Religion* and *Virtue*, or to know no uſe of Reaſon, but in the Service of their Paſſions and Inclinations, or at leaſt of their comparatively trivial Intereſts.

To aſſert, upon this Occaſion, that *Ladies* wou'd do well, if before they came to the *Care* of *Families*, they employ'd ſome of their many idle Hours in gaining a little Knowledge in *Languages*, and the uſeful *Sciences*, wou'd be, I know, to contradict the Senſe of moſt Men; but yet I think that ſuch an Aſſertion admits of no other Confutation than the uſual one, which oppoſite Opinions to theirs are wont to receive from People who reaſon not, but live by Fancy and Cuſtom, and that is to be laught at; for it cannot be deny'd, that this Knowledge wou'd hereafter be more or leſs uſeful to *Ladies*, in enabling them, either themſelves to teach their *Children*, or better to over-ſee and direct thoſe that do ſo; and tho' this Learning is perhaps the leaſt part in *Education*, it is not to be neglected, but even betimes to be taken care of, leſt a habit of Idleneſs or Inapplication of Mind be got, which once contracted is very hardly cur'd.

This being ſo, and that the Beginnings of all Science are difficult to Children (who cannot like grown People fix their Attention) it is juſtly to be fear'd, that they ſhould by the ill Uſage they receive from the Impatience and Peeviſhneſs of ſuch *Teachers*, as *Servants* or *young Tutors*, take

take an Averſion to *Learning*; and we ſee in effect, that this very frequently happens; for the teaching of little *Children*, ſo as not to diſguſt them, requires much greater Patience and Addreſs, than common People are often capable of, or than moſt can imagine who have not had Experience of it: But ſhould ſuch *Teachers* as we have ſpoken of, have the neceſſary Complaiſance for thoſe they *teach*, there is then, on the other ſide, a yet greater Danger to be apprehended from them; the bad Effect of which will be, that by an Affection natural in *Children* of imitating thoſe they *Love*, they will have their Manners and Diſpoſitions tinctured and tainted by thoſe of Perſons ſo dear to them.

Now both the Inconveniencies here mention'd might at leaſt in great Meaſure, if not wholly be remedy'd, would *Mothers* but be at ſo much Pains as to *teach* their *Children*, either altogether, or a good Part themſelves, what it is fit for them to *Learn* in the firſt eight or ten Years of their *Lives*; as to read *Engliſh* perfectly, to underſtand ordinary *Latin* and *Arithmetick*, with ſome general Knowledge of *Geography*, *Chronology*, and *Hiſtory*; moſt or all of which Things may at that young Age be underſtood by a *Child* of a very ordinary Capacity, and may be ſo taught *Children* as that they may learn them almoſt inſenſibly, in *Play* if they have skilful *Teachers*. It ſeems to me therefore that young *Ladies* cannot better employ ſo much of their Time as is requiſite hereto, than in acquiring ſuch Qualifications as theſe, which may be of ſo great uſe to them hereafter; however, if any who have not made this early Proviſion of ſuch Sciences, are yet truly deſirous to do their Children all the Good that is in their Power, they may, tho' not with the ſame Facility, be able to inſtruct them alike, notwithſtanding that Diſadvantage; and Mr. *Locke* on the Experience of it has aſſerted, that a *Mother* who underſtands not *Latin* beforehand, may yet teach it to her *Child*; which if ſhe can, it is not to be doubted, but that ſhe may do the ſame in all the reſt; ſuch a ſuperficial Knowledge as will ſerve

to

to enter any one in every of the above-mention'd *Sciences*, is much eaſier attained than the *Latin* Tongue; and if a *Mother* has ever ſo little more Capacity, ſhe may eaſily keep before him in teaching both him and herſelf together, by which Means ſhe will make herſelf the beſt Reparation that ſhe can for her own paſt neglect in it, or that of her *Parents*. One of the moſt uſeful and neceſſary Duties of *Parents*, is to take care to *Catechiſe* their *Children*, which has of late been ſhamefully neglected, as indeed have been too much all the other Duties of *Parents*, as if all the Obligations lay upon their *Children*, and there were none incumbent upon them.

It is a known Saying of *Melancthon*, that there are three Things extremely difficult, to *bear Children, to inſtruct and bring them up to be Men, and to govern them when they arrive at Man's Eſtate*. The Inſtruction of *Children* is none of the leaſt difficult of theſe; for to do it to the beſt Advantage, does not only require great Sagacity to diſcern their particular Diſpoſition and Temper but great Diſcretion to deal with them, and manage them, and alſo continual Care and diligent Attendance, to form them by Degrees, to Religion and Virtue.

It requires great Wiſdom and Induſtry to advance a conſiderable Eſtate, much Art, Contrivance and Pains to raiſe a great and regular Building: But the greateſt and nobleſt Work in the World, and an Effect of the greateſt Prudence and Care, is to rear and build up a Man, and to form and faſhion him to *Piety, Juſtice, Temperance*, and all kind of honeſt and worthy Actions. Now the Foundations of this Work are to be carefully laid in the tender Years of *Children*, that it may riſe and grow up with them, according to the Advice of the Wiſe Man, *Train up a Child in the way he ſhould go, and when he is old he will not depart from it*. By *Childhood* is underſtood the Age of Perſons from their *Birth* but more eſpecially from their firſt Capacity of *Inſtruction*, till they arrive at the *State* and Age which next ſucceeds *Childhood*, which we call *Youth*, and which is the proper Seaſon

Seaſon for *Confirmation*; for when Children have been well *catechis'd* and inſtructed in *Religion*, then is the fitteſt time for them to take upon themſelves, and in their own Perſon to confirm that *ſolemn Vow*, which by their *Sureties* they made at their *Baptiſm*. *Parents* muſt carefully inſtruct their *Children* in the Courſe of Life they ought to lead, in the Knowledge and Practice of their whole Duty to God and Man, which they ought to obſerve and perform all the Days of their Lives.

And the conſequent Fruit and Benefit of this good *Education* is, *that Children when they are old will not depart from it.* Which we are to underſtand according to the Moral Probability of Things, not as if this happy Effect did always and infallibly follow upon the good *Education* of a *Child*, but that this very frequently is, and may probably be preſum'd and hop'd to be, the Fruit and Effect of a pious and prudent Education.

We cannot enough urge the great Duty incumbent upon all *Mothers*, in the tender and careful *Nurſing* of *Children:* This Affection and Tenderneſs, Nature, which is our ſecret Guide and Director, has implanted in all living Creatures towards their *Young Ones*, and there cannot be a greater Reproach to Creatures endued with Reaſon, than to neglect a Duty which Nature directs even the Brute Creatures to, by a blind and unthinking Inſtinct. It cannot therefore be neglected without a downright Affront to Nature; nothing as we have hinted elſewhere, can excuſe it, but *Diſability*, *Sickneſs*, or the *Evident Danger* of the *Mother*, or the *Interpoſition* of the *Father's Authority*, or ſome very *Extraordinary* and publick Neceſſity.

This I foreſee will ſeem a very hard Saying to nice and delicate *Mothers*, who prefer their own Eaſe and Pleaſure to the Fruit of their own Bodies; but whether they will mind or not mind it, we muſt deal plainly with them in a Matter of ſo much Importance to them, and be ſo faithful as to tell them, that this is a *Natural Duty*, and becauſe it is ſo, of a more neceſſary and indiſpenſable

diſpenſable Obligation, than any poſitive Precept of *Reveal'd Religion*, and that a general Neglect of it is one of the great and crying Sins of this Age and Nation, and which, as much as any Sin whatſoever, is evidently a Puniſhment to itſelf in the palpable ill Effects and Conſequences of it.

The Neglect of this *Duty* is a ſort of expoſing of *Children*, eſpecially when it is not done, as very often it is not, with more than ordinary Care and Choice; it always expoſes them to manifeſt Inconvenience, and ſometimes to great Danger, even to that Degree as in the Conſequence of it, is but little better than the laying a *Child* in the *Streets*, and leaving it to the Care and Compaſſion of a *Pariſh*. There are two very viſible Inconveniencies which do commanly attend it.

Strange Milk, which is very diſagreeable to the *Child*, and with which the *Child* to be ſure ſucks in the natural Infirmities of the *Nurſe*, together with a great deal of her natural Inclinations and irregular Paſſions, which many times ſtick by the *Child* a long time after; and, which is worſe than all this, it ſometimes happens that ſome ſecret Diſeaſe of the *Nurſe* is convey'd to the *Child*.

A ſhameful and dangerous neglect of the Child, eſpecially by ſuch *Nurſes* as make a *Trade* of it, of whom there are great Numbers in and about this great *City*, who, after they have made their firſt and main Advantage of the *Child*, by the exceſſive, not to ſay extravagant *Vails*, which uſually here in *England*, above all other Places in the World, are given at *Chriſtnings*, grow very negligent; and then by the ſtrait Allowances which are commonly made afterwards for the *Nurſing*, and keeping of the *Child* they are tempted to be unnatural; for if the *Child* die for want of due Care, the *Nurſe* is at liberty to make a new Advantage by taking another.

Nor can it well be otherwiſe expected than that a *Nurſe*, who by this Courſe is firſt made to be unnatural to her own *Child*, ſhould have no great Care and Tenderneſs for a *Child* which is not her own. I have heard a very

very ſad Obſervation made by thoſe who have had the Opportunity to know it, that in ſeveral of the *Towns* and *Villages* about *London*, where this Trade of *Nurſing* is chiefly driven, hardly *one* in *five* of theſe Children lives out the *Year*; and this ſurely is a Danger which natural Affection, as well as *Duty*, does oblige *Parents* to take all poſſible Care to prevent. This Courſe does beſides moſt certainly tend very much to the eſtranging and weakning of natural Affection on both ſides, I mean both on the part of the *Mother* and of the *Child*. The Pain of *Nurſing* as well as of *Bearing*, does inſenſibly create a ſtrong Tenderneſs of Affection and Care in the *Mother*; *Can a Woman*, ſays God, *forget her ſucking Child, that ſhe ſhould not have Compaſſion on the Son of her Womb?*

This would greatly endear the Mother to the *Child*, which Endearment, when the *Child* is put out, is tranſferred from the *Mother* to the *Nurſe*, and many times continues to be ſo for a great many Years after, and often to that Degree, as if the *Nurſe* was the true *Mother*, and the true *Mother* a meer *Stranger*. Natural Affection muſt by this Means be extremely weaken'd, which is great Pity, becauſe when it is kept up in its full Strength, it often proves one of the beſt Securities of the *Duty* of a *Child*.

But becauſe this ſevere Doctrine will go down but very hardly with a great many, I muſt take the more Care to guard it againſt the *Objections* which will be made to it. Thoſe from *Natural Diſability* or *Sickneſs*, from *Evident* and *Apparent Danger* of the *Mother*, or from the *Interpoſition* of the *Father's Authority*, or from *plain Neceſſity*, or if there be any other that have an equal Reaſon with theſe, I have prevented them already; by allowing them to be juſt and reaſonable *Exceptions* from the general Rule, when they are real and not made Pretences to ſhake off our *Duty*.

But there are, beſides theſe, two Objections, which tho' indeed they are Real, ſeem to have too great a weight with thoſe who would fain decline this Duty, yet are by

by no Means ſufficient to excuſe *Mothers*, no not thoſe of the higheſt Rank and Quality, from the natural Obligation of it; and they are theſe, the *manifeſt Trouble*, and the *manifold Reſtraints* which the careful Diſcharge of this *Duty* does unavoidably bring upon thoſe who ſubmit themſelves to it.

For the *Trouble* of it, I have only this to ſay and I think that no more need be ſaid about it, that no Body is diſcharged from any *Duty*, by reaſon of the Trouble which neceſſarily attends it, and is inſeparable from it; ſince God, who made it a *Duty*, foreſaw the Trouble of it, when he made it ſo.

As to the *manifold Reſtraints* which it lays upon *Mothers*, this will beſt be anſwer'd by conſidering of what Nature thoſe *Reſtraints* are, and they are chiefly in theſe and the like Inſtances. This Duty *reſtrains* Mothers from ſpending their Morning and their Mony in curious and coſtly *Dreſſings*, from miſpending the reſt of the Day in formal, and for the moſt part impertinent Viſits, and in ſeeing and hearing *Plays*, many of which are neither fit to be ſeen nor heard by modeſt Perſons, or thoſe who pretend to Religion or Virtue, as 'tis to be hop'd all *Chriſtians* do, eſpecially Perſons of higher Rank and Quality; and it reſtrains them alſo from trifling away a great Part of the Night in Gaming and Revelling, till paſt Midnight, I am loth to ſay how much—

Theſe are thoſe terrible *Reſtraints* which this natural Duty of *Mothers* nurſing their *Children* lays upon them; now I cannot but think all theſe to be very happy *Reſtraints*; happy ſurely for the *Child*, and in many Reſpects happy for the *Father*, and for the whole Family, which by this Means will be kept in much better Order; but happieſt of all for the *Mother*, who does therein not only diſcharge a great and neceſſary Duty, but is hereby alſo hindred from running into a great many Faults, which, before they will be forgiven, muſt coſt her a deep Contrition and a very bitter Repentance.

The next Particular, wherein the good *Education* of *Children* does conſiſt, is *in bringing them to be baptiz'd and admitted Members of Chriſt's Church* at the Times appointed or accuſtomed in the National Church of which the *Parents* are *Members*. They ſhould bring them to the *Church*, to be there publickly *initiated* and ſolemnly admitted by *Baptiſm*. This the *Rules* of the *Church* of *England* do ſtrictly injoin, unleſs the *Child* be in danger of Death; and in that Caſe only it is allow'd to adminiſter *Baptiſm* privately, and in a Summary way, without performing the whole *Office*. But then if the Child live, it is order'd that it ſhall be brought to *Church*, where the Remainder of the Office is to be ſolemnly perform'd.

I know that of late Years, ſince our unhappy Confuſions, this *Sacrament* has very frequently been adminiſter'd in *private:* And *Miniſters*, to avoid the great Miſchief of *Separation*, have been in a manner neceſſitated to comply with the Obſtinacy of the greater and more powerful of their *Pariſhioners*, who for their Eaſe or Humour, or for the Convenience of a pompous *Chriſtning*, will either have their *Children* baptiz'd at home by their Miniſter, or if he refuſe, will get ſome other Miniſter to do it, which is very irregular.

Now I would intreat ſuch Perſons calmly to conſider how contrary to Reaſon, and to the plain Deſign of the Inſtitution of this *Sacrament*, this perverſe Cuſtom and their obſtinate Reſolution in it is: For is there any *Civil Society* or *Corporation*, into which Perſons are admitted without ſome kind of Solemnity? And is the Privilege of being admitted *Members* of the *Chriſtian Church*, and *Heirs* of the Great and Glorious *Promiſes* and *Bleſſings* of the *New Covenant* of the *Goſpel*, leſs conſiderable, and fit to be conferr'd with leſs *Solemnity?* Thoſe who are *Chriſtians* in good earneſt, will, without my uſing more Words about it, conſider what has has been ſaid in this Particular.

Another and very neceſſary Part of the good *Education* of *Children* is by degrees to inform them and careſully

fully inſtruct them in the whole compaſs of their Duty to God, their Neighbour, and themſelves, that ſo they may be taught how to behave themſelves in all the Steps of their Life, from their firſt Capacity of Reaſon, 'till they arrive at the more perfect Uſe and Exerciſe of that Faculty. If they be well inſtructed at firſt, they will be better able to direct and govern themſelves afterwards.

This *Duty* God does expreſly and very particularly charge upon his own People, the People of *Iſrael:* Speaking of the Laws which he had given them, *Thou ſhalt*, ſays he, *teach them diligently unto thy Children, and ſhalt talk of them when thou ſitteſt in thine Houſe, and when thou walkeſt by the Way, when thou lieſt down and when thou riſeſt up.* And thus God, long before, ſaid, that *Abraham* the *Father of the Faithful*, would do: *I know Abraham*, ſays he, *that he will command his Children and his Houſhold after him to keep the way of the Lord.*

This Work ought to be begun very early, upon the firſt budding and appearance of Reaſon and Underſtanding in *Children. Whom ſhall he teach Knowledge? Whom ſhall he make to underſtand Doctrine? Them that are wean'd from the Milk and drawn from the Breaſt*, &c.

To this end we muſt, by ſuch Degrees as they are capable of, bring them acquainted with God and themſelves; and in the firſt place we muſt inform them, that there is ſuch a *Being* as *God*, whom we ought to honour and reverence above all things: And then, that we are all his Creatures, and the Works of his Hands; that he continually preſerves us, and gives us all the good things that we enjoy; and therefore we ought to ask every thing of him by Prayer, becauſe this is an Acknowledgement of our Dependence upon him; and to return Thanks to him for all that we have and hope for, becauſe this is a juſt and eaſy Tribute, and all that we can render to him for his numberleſs Favours and Benefits.

And after this, they are more particularly to be inſtructed in their Duty towards God and Man: And becauſe Fear and Hope are the two Paſſions which do chiefly

chiefly ſway and govern Human Nature, the main Springs and Principles of Action; therefore Children ſhould be carefully inform'd, that there is a *Life and Death*, wherein Men ſhall receive from God a mighty and eternal Reward, or a terrible and endleſs Puniſhment, according as they have done or neglected their Duty in this Life. That God will love and reward thoſe who do his Will and keep his Commandments, but will execute a dreadful Puniſhment upon the Workers of Iniquity, and the wilful Tranſgreſſors of his Laws.

And according as they are capable, they are to be made ſenſible of the great Degeneracy and Corruption of Human Nature, deriv'd to us by the *Fall* and wilful Tranſgreſſion of our *firſt Parents*; and of the way of our *Recovery* out of this miſerable State by *Jeſus Chriſt*, whom *God* has ſent in our Nature to purchaſe and accompliſh the *Redemption* and Salvation of Mankind from the Captivity of *Sin* and *Satan*, and from the Damnation of Hell.

The good *Education* of Children conſiſts not only in informing their Minds in the Knowledge of *God*, and their Duty, but more eſpecially in endeavouring with the greateſt Care and Prudence to form their Lives and Manners to Religion and Piety: And this muſt be done by training them in the Exerciſe of all *Moral* and *Chriſtian Graces* and *Virtues*: As,

To *Obedience* and *Modeſty*, *Diligence* and *Sincerity*, *Tenderneſs* and *Pity*, as the general *Diſpoſitions* to Piety and Religion.

To the good Government of their *Paſſions*, and of their *Tongue*, and particularly to *ſpeak Truth*, and to *hate Lying*, as a baſe and vile Quality.

To *Devotion* towards *God*, to *Sobriety* and *Chaſtity* with regard to themſelves, and to *Juſtice* and *Charity* towards all Men.

Parents muſt take great care to maintain their Authority over their *Children*, by inculcating into them the Doctrine of *Obedience*; otherwiſe they will neither regard their Commands, nor hearken to and follow their Inſtructions.

Inſtructions. If they once get head, and grow ſtubborn and diſobedient, there is very little Hope left of doing any great Good upon them.

They muſt be train'd up in *Modeſty*, which is a fear of *Shame* and *Diſgrace*. This Diſpoſition is proper to *Children*, and a marvellous Advantage to all good Purpoſes. They are *Modeſt*, ſays *Ariſtotle*, *who are afraid to offend, and they are afraid to offend, who are moſt apt to do it*; as *Children* are, becauſe they are much under the Power of their Paſſions, without a proportionable Strength of Reaſon to govern and keep them under.

Now *Modeſty* is not properly a *Virtue*, but it is a very good Sign of a tractable and towardly *Diſpoſition*, a great Preſervative and Security againſt *Sin* and *Vice*. And thoſe *Children* who are much under the Reſtraint of *Modeſty*, are look'd upon as moſt hopeful and likely to do good; whereas *Immodeſty* is a vicious Temper, broke looſe and got free from all Reſtraint: Then there is nothing left to keep an *impudent* Perſon from *Sin*, when fear of *Shame* is gone; for *Sin* will ſoon take poſſeſſion of that Perſon whom *Shame* has left. He that is once become ſhameleſs, has proſtituted himſelf: Therefore preſerve this *Diſpoſition* in *Children* as much as is poſſible, as one of the beſt means to preſerve their *Innocence*, and to bring them to Goodneſs. The next thing for Parents to obſerve in the *Education* of *Children*, is to uſe them to be *Diligent*; *for without Diligence*, ſays a learned Author, *there never was any great and excellent Perſon*. When the *Roman* Hiſtorians deſcribe an extraordinary Man, this always enters into his Character as an eſſential part of it, that he was of *incredible Induſtry*, *of ſingular Diligence*, or ſomething to that purpoſe. And indeed a Perſon can neither be excellently good, nor extremely bad, without this Quality. The Devil himſelf could not be ſo bad and miſchievous, if he were not ſo ſtirring and reſtleſs a Spirit, and did not *compaſs the Earth, and go to and fro ſeeking whom he might devour*.

This is part of the Character of *Sylla*, *Marius*, and *Catiline*, thoſe great Diſturbers of the *Roman* State, as well as of *Cæſar* and *Pompey*, who were much greater and better Men, but yet gave Trouble enough to their Country, and at laſt diſſolv'd the *Roman* Commonwealth, by their Ambition and Contention for Superiority. This is a part of all their Characters, that they were of a vigorous and indefatigable Spirit. *Diligence* in itſelf then is neither a *Virtue* nor a *Vice*, but may be apply'd either way, to good or bad Purpoſes; and yet where all other Requiſites do concur, it is a very proper *Inſtrument* for *Virtue*.

Let *Children* therefore be bred up to *Diligence*, if ever you deſire they ſhould excel in any kind. The *Diligent Hand*, ſays *Solomon*, *maketh Rich*; *Rich* in *Eſtate*, *Rich* in *Knowledge*; *Seeſt thou a Man diligent in his Buſineſs? he ſhall ſtand before Princes.* And again, *the Hand of the Diligent ſhall bear Rule.* Can we want Examples to ſhew us how the greateſt Men in the World have diſtinguiſh'd themſelves by their Diligence? Our buſy active Times cannot but furniſh us with innumerable Inſtances; happy for themſelves and us, if that Diligence was made the *Inſtrument* of *Virtue*, and not exerciſed in the Advancement of *Diviſion* and *Confuſion*.

Diligence puts almoſt every thing in our Power, and will in time make Children capable of the beſt and greateſt Things: Whereas *Idleneſs* is their Bane and Ruin; it is the Unbending of their *Spirits*, the *Ruſt* of their Faculties, and as it were the laying of their Mind *fallow*; not as *Husbandmen* do their Lands, that they might get new heart and ſtrength, but to impair and loſe that which they have. *Children* that are bred up in *Lazineſs*, are almoſt neceſſarily bad, becauſe they cannot take the Pains to be good; and they cannot take Pains becauſe they have never been inur'd and accuſtom'd to it, which makes their Spirits *reſtive*; and when you have occaſion to quicken and ſpur them up to Buſineſs, they will ſtand ſtock ſtill.

There-

Therefore never let your *Children* be without a *Calling*, or without ſome uſeful, or at leaſt innocent Employment, that will take them up; that they may not be put upon a kind of Neceſſity of being Vicious, for want of ſomething better to do. The *Devil* tempts the Active and Vigorous into his Service, knowing what fit and proper Inſtruments they are to do his Drudgery; but the Slothful and Idle, no body having hir'd them and ſet them to work, lie in his way, he ſtumbles upon them *as he goes about:* They in a manner offer themſelves to his Service, and having nothing to do, they even tempt the *Devil* himſelf to tempt them, and to take them in his way.

Sincerity is ſo abſolutely neceſſary to the well educating of *Children*, that what has been already ſaid of it, is doubtleſs more than ſufficient to put Parents upon impreſſing it ſtrongly on the Minds of their *Children*, by frequent and earneſt Inſtruction. It is not ſo properly a ſingle *Virtue* as the Life and Soul of all other Graces and Virtues, and without it, what ſhew of Goodneſs ſoever a Man may make, he is unſound and rotten at the Heart. Let this *Diſpoſition* be above all things cheriſh'd in *Children*, as that which, when they come to be *Men*, will be the greater Security and Ornament of their *Lives*.

When they come to engage in Buſineſs, and to have Dealings in the World, *Tenderneſs* and *Pity* will be a good Bar againſt Injuſtice and Oppreſſion, will be continually prompting us to *Charity*, and will fetch powerful Arguments for it from our own Bowels. To cultivate this Goodneſs and Tenderneſs of Nature, this ſo very human and uſeful Affection, keep *Children* as much as is poſſible out of the way of *bloody Sights* and *Spectacles* of Cruelty: Diſcountenance in them all barbarous Uſage of Creatures under their Power: Do not allow them to torture and kill them for their Sport and Pleaſure, becauſe this will, inſenſibly and by degrees, harden their Hearts, and make them leſs apt to compaſſionate the Wants of the Poor, and the Sufferings and Afflictions of the Miſerable.

Children muſt be trained up to the Government of their *Paſſions* and of their *Tongues*, as the main *Foundations* of Religion and Virtue. It is the Diſorder of the *Paſſions*, more eſpecially of *Deſire*, and *Fear*, and *Anger*, which betrays into many Evils. *Anger* prompts Men to *Contention* and *Murder*; inordinate *Deſire*, to *Covetouſneſs*, *Fraud*, and *Oppreſſion*; and *Fear* many times awes Men into *Sin*, and deters them from their Duty. Now if theſe *Paſſions* be cheriſh'd, or even but let alone in *Children*, they will in a ſhort time grow headſtrong and unruly, and when they come to be Men, will corrupt the Judgment, turn *Good-nature* into *Humour*, and *Underſtanding* into *Prejudice* and *Wilfulneſs*; but if they be carefully obſerv'd, and prudently reſtrain'd, they may by degrees be manag'd, and brought under Government. And the Excreſcences of them being prun'd away, they may prove excellent Inſtruments of *Virtue*.

Be careful therefore to diſcountenance in *Children* every thing that looks like Rage and furious *Anger*, and to ſhew them the Unreaſonableneſs and Deformity of it: Check their longing Deſires after things pleaſant, and uſe them to frequent Diſappointments of that kind; that when you think fit to gratify them, they may take it for a Favour, and not challenge every thing they have a mind to, as their due; that they may by degrees learn to ſubmit to the more prudent Choice of their *Parents*, as being much better able to judge what is good and fit for them.

When you ſee them at any time apt, out of *Fear*, to neglect their Duty, or to fall into any *Sin*, or to be tempted, by telling a *Lye*, to commit one Fault to hide and excuſe another, which *Children* are apt to do; the beſt Remedy of this Evil will be to plant a greater *Fear* againſt a leſs, and to tell them *what* and *whom* they ſhould chiefly fear: *Not him who can hurt and kill the Body, but Him, who after he hath kill'd, can deſtroy both Body and Soul in Hell.*

The Neglect of *Children* in this matter, the not teaching them to govern their *Paſſions*, is the true Cauſe why many that have proved ſincere *Chriſtians*, when they come to be Men, have yet been very imperfect in their Converſation, and their Lives have been full of Inequalities and Breaches, which have not only been matter of great Trouble and Diſquiet to themſelves, but of great Scandal to *Religion*; when their Light which ſhould *ſhine before* Men, is ſo often darken'd and obſcured by theſe frequent and viſible Infirmities.

To the end that *Children* may learn the *Government of their Tongues*, teach them *Silence*, eſpecially in preſence of their *Betters*. And as ſoon as they are capable of ſuch a Leſſon, let them be taught not to ſpeak, but upon Conſideration, both of *what* they ſay, and before *whom*. Above all, inculcate upon them that moſt neceſſary *Duty* and *Virtue* of *ſpeaking Truth*, as one of the beſt and ſtrongeſt Bonds of Human Society; and poſſeſs them with the Baſeneſs and Vileneſs of telling a Lye. For if it be ſo great a Provocation to *give* a Man the *Lye*, then ſurely to be guilty of that Fault muſt be a mighty Reproach.

They who write of *Japan* tell us, that thoſe People, tho' mere *Heathens*, take ſuch an effectual Courſe in the Education of their *Children*, as to render a *Lye* and *Breach of Faith* above all things odious to them; inſomuch that it is a very rare thing for any Perſon among them to be taken in a *Lye*, or found guilty of *Breach of Faith*. And cannot the *Rules* of *Chriſtianity* be render'd as effectual to reſtrain Men from theſe Faults, which are ſcandalous even to *Nature*, and much more ſo to the *Chriſtian* Religion?

To the *Government* of the *Tongue*, doth alſo belong the reſtraining of Children from *lewd* and *obſcene* Words, from *vain* and *profane* Talk, and eſpecially from horrid *Oaths* and *Imprecations*: From all which they are eaſily kept at firſt; but if they are once accuſtom'd to them, it will be found no ſuch eaſy Matter for them to get quit

of theſe evil Habits. It will require great Attention and Watchfulneſs over themſelves, to keep Oaths out of their common Diſcourſe; but if they be heated and in paſſion, they throw out Curſes and Oaths, as naturally as Men that are highly provok'd, fling Stones or any thing that comes next to hand at one another. So dangerous a thing is it to let any thing that is bad in *Children*, grow up into a *Habit*.

As the principal and eſſential Parts of *Religion* and *Virtue*, let Children be carefully bred up to *Sobriety* and *Temperance* in regard to themſelves, under which are alſo comprehended *Purity* and *Chaſtity*. The Government of the ſenſual Appetite, as to all kind of *Bodily* Pleaſure, is not only a great *Part* of Religion, but an excellent *Inſtrument* of it, and a neceſſary *Foundation* of *Piety* and *Juſtice*. For he that cannot govern himſelf, is not like to diſcharge his Duty either to God or Men. Wherefore St. *Paul* puts *Sobriety* firſt, as a *Primary* and *Principal* Virtue; in which Men are inſtructed by the *Chriſtian Religion*; and which muſt be laid as the Foundation both of *Piety* towards *God*, and of *Righteouſneſs* to Men. *The Grace of God*, for ſo he calls the *Goſpel*, *that brings Salvation unto all Men, hath appeared, teaching us that, denying Ungodlineſs and worldly Luſts, we ſhould live ſoberly, and righteouſly, and godly in this preſent World.* It firſt teaches us to live *ſoberly*, and unleſs we breed up *Children* to this *Virtue*, we muſt never expect that they will either live *righteouſly or godly in this preſent World.*

They muſt eſpecially be bred up to great Temperance in *Diet*, which will retrench the Fuel of other inordinate Appetites. It is a good Saying, *A well-manner'd and well govern'd Appetite*, in Matter of *Meats* and *Drinks*, is a great *Part of Virtue*. I do not mean that *Children* ſhould be brought up according to the Rules of a *Leſſian Diet*, which ſets an equal Stint to all *Stomachs*, and is as Senſeleſs a thing as a *Law* would be, which ſhould enjoin that *Shoes* for all Mankind ſhould be made upon one and the ſame Laſt; but that they ſhould be fed tem-

temperately, and allow'd ſuch Food, both for Quantity and Quality, as is convenient for them.

What follows next in the *Education* of *Children*, is to train them up to a ſerious and unaffected *Piety* and *Devotion* towards *God*; ſtill and quiet, real and ſubſtantial, without much ſhew and noiſe; and as free as may be from all *Tricks* of Superſtition, or *Freaks* of *Enthuſiaſm*, which, if *Parents* and *Teachers* be not very prudent, will almoſt unavoidably inſinuate themſelves into the *Religion* of *Children*; and when they are grown up, will make them appear, to wiſe and ſober Perſons, fantaſtical and conceited, rendring them very apt to impoſe their own fooliſh Superſtitions and wild Conceits upon others, who underſtand *Religion* much better than themſelves.

Let them be taught to honour and love God above all things; to ſerve him in private, to attend conſtantly upon his publick Worſhip, and to keep their Minds intent upon the ſeveral Parts of it, without Wandring and Diſtraction. To pray to God as the Fountain of all Grace, and the Giver of every good and perfect Gift; and to acknowledge him, and to render Thanks to him, as our moſt gracious and conſtant Benefactor, and the great Patron and Preſerver of our Lives; to be careful to do what he commands, and to avoid what he has forbidden; to be always under a lively Senſe and Apprehenſion of his pure and all ſeeing Eye, which beholds us in Secret; and to do every thing in Obedience to the Authority of that great *Lawgiver*, *who is able to ſave and to deſtroy*.

Parents ſhould have a ſtrict Regard, in the *Education* of their *Children*, to *Juſtice* and *Honeſty*; they ſhould convince them that they ought to defraud and oppreſs no Man, to be as good as their Word, and to perform all their *Promiſes* and Contracts. They ſhould endeavour to imprint upon their Minds the Equity of that *great* Rule, which is ſo natural and ſo eaſy, that even Children are capable of it, I mean that *Rule* which our *Saviour* tells

us is the *Law and the Prophets:* To do to others as we wou'd have others do to us, if we were in their Caſes and Circumſtances, and they in ours.

You that are *Parents* and have to deal with the World, ought to be juſt and equal in all your Dealings: In the firſt Place for the ſake of your own Souls, and next for the ſake of your *Children*; not only that you may entail no Curſe upon the Eſtate you leave them, but likewiſe that you may teach them no Injuſtice by the Example you ſet before them, which in this Particular they will be as apt to imitate as in any one thing, becauſe of the preſent Worldly Advantages which it ſeems to bring, and becauſe *Juſtice* is in truth a *Manly* Virtue, and leaſt underſtood by *Children:* Wherefore *Injuſtice* is a *Vice*, which they will ſooneſt practiſe, and with the leaſt Reluctancy, becauſe they have leaſt Knowledge of it in many Particular Caſes, and becauſe alſo they have ſo little Senſe of the great Virtue of Honeſty. They ſhould not be allow'd to Cheat, no not in Play and Sport, even when they play for little or nothing: For if they practiſe it in that Caſe, and be unjuſt in a little, they will be much more tempted to be ſo when they can gain a great deal by it.

Xenophon in his *Inſtitution* of *Cyrus*, which he deſign'd for the Idea of a well-educated Prince, tells us this little but very inſtructive Story concerning young *Cyrus*; that his Governor, the better to make him underſtand the Nature of Juſtice, put this Caſe to him: *You ſee there*, ſaid he to *Cyrus*, *two Boys playing of different Stature; the leſſer of them has a very long Coat, and the taller a very ſhort one; now if you were a Judge, how would you diſpoſe of theſe two Garments? Cyrus* immediately, and with very good Reaſon, as he thought, paſſes this ſudden Sentence, *The taller Boy ſhould have the longer Garment, and he that was of the lower Stature the ſhorter*, becauſe this certainly was fitteſt for them both: Upon which his Governor rebukes him to this purpoſe, telling him, *that if he were to make two Coats for them, he ſaid well;*

well; *but he did not put this Caſe to him as a* Tailor, *but as a* Judge, *and as ſuch he had given a very wrong Sentence*; *for a* Judge *ought not to conſider what is* moſt fit, *but what* is juſt; *not who could make* beſt uſe *of a thing, but who has* moſt Right to it.

By theſe familiar ways may the Principles of Virtue be inſtill'd into *Children*, and there is nothing wherein they may be more eaſily miſ-led than in *Juſtice*; in Matter of *Right* and *Wrong*. They ſhould therefore be taught the general Rules of both, becauſe if we would teach them to do *Juſtice*, and to avoid doing *Injuſtice*, we muſt teach them to know what is *Juſtice* and what *Injuſtice*; for many are unjuſt merely out of Ignorance, and for want of knowing better, and cannot help it.

As *Charity*, I mean chiefly to the Poor and Deſtitute, is an *Eſſential*, ſo it is a moſt *Subſtantial* Part of Religion. This *Diſpoſition* muſt be encourag'd in *Children*, not only by Example but by frequent inculcating it upon them by Paſſages of Scripture: as, that *pure Religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, to viſit the Fatherleſs and the Widows in their Affliction*; that, *as we ſow in this kind*, ſo we ſhall *reap*; that, *he ſhall have Judgment without Mercy, who hath ſhew'd no Mercy*; that at the *Judgment* of the *Great Day*, we ſhall in a particular Manner be called to Account for our Practice or Omiſſion of this Duty, and ſhall then be abſolved or condemned, according as we have exerciſed or neglected this great Virtue of the *Chriſtian Religion*.

Let *Parents* always bear in mind, that the good *Education* of *Children* conſiſts *in giving them good Example*. This Courſe *David* took in his Family, as appears by that ſolemn Reſolution of his, *I will behave myſelf wiſely in a perfect way, I will walk within my Houſe with a perfect Heart*. Let *Parents* and *Maſters of Families* give good Examples to their *Children* and *Servants*, in a conſtant ſerving of God in their *Families*, which will nouriſh Religion in thoſe that are under their Care. And let them alſo be Exemplary in a ſober and holy Converſation, before thoſe that belong to them.

They muſt alſo take care that their *Children*, as far as is poſſible, have no bad Examples to converſe with, either among their Servants, or their own Companions, leſt *by walking with them they learn their way, and get a blot to their Souls.* There is Contagion in Example, and nothing does more ſlily inſinuate itſelf and gain upon us than a living and familiar Pattern. Wherefore, as much as lies in *Parents*, let *Children* always have good Examples before them; eſpecially let Parents themſelves be Exemplary to them in the beſt Things, becauſe their Example is of all other the moſt powerful, and carries greateſt Authority with it; without this, Inſtruction will ſignify very little, and the great Force and Efficacy of it will be loſt. We ſhall find it very hard to perſuade our *Children* to do that which they ſee we do not practiſe ourſelves: For even *Children* have ſo much Senſe and Sagacity, as to underſtand that Actions are more real than Words, and a more certain Indication of what a Man does really and inwardly believe. Example is the moſt lively way of teaching, and becauſe *Children* are much given to Imitation, it is alſo a very delightful way of Inſtruction, and that of which Children are moſt capable, both becauſe it is beſt underſtood, and is apt to make the deepeſt Impreſſion upon them.

Parents then, above all others, have one Argument to be good themſelves, for the ſake of their *Children*: If you deſire to have them good, the beſt way to make them ſo, is to give them the Example of it in being good yourſelves. For this Reaſon Parents ſhould take great Care to do nothing but what is worthy of Imitation. Your *Children* will follow you in what you do; therefore do not go before them in any thing that is Evil: The bad Example of *Parents* is both a Temptation and Encouragement to *Children* to Sin, becauſe it is a kind of Authority for what they do, and looks like a Juſtification of their Wickedneſs.

With

With what Reaſon can you expect that your Children ſhould follow your good Inſtructions, when you yourſelves give them ill Examples? You do but as it were beckon to them with the Head, and ſhew them the way to Heaven by your good Counſel; but you take them by the Hand, and lead them in the way to Hell by your contrary Example. Whenever you Swear, or tell a *Lye*, or are Paſſionate and Furious, and come drunk into your Family; you weaken the Authority of your Commands, and loſe all Reverence and Obedience to them, by contradicting your own Precepts.

The Precepts of a good Man are apt to raiſe and inflame others to the Obſervation of them; but when they come from one who is faulty and vicious in that kind himſelf, they are languid and faint, and give us no Heart and Encouragement to the Exerciſe of thoſe Virtues which we plainly ſee they do not practiſe themſelves. Doſt thou, who teacheſt thy Children to ſpeak Truth, tell a *Lye* thyſelf? Thou that ſayeſt they muſt not Swear, doſt thou profane the Name of God by Cuſtomary Oaths and Curſes? Thou art unfit to be *a Guide to the Blind, a Light to them that are in Darkneſs, an Inſtructor of the fooliſh, and a Teacher of Babes; becauſe thou thyſelf haſt only a form of Knowledge, and of Truth in the Law*, but art deſtitute of the Life and Practice of it. In a word, if you be not careful to give good Examples to your *Children*, you defeat your own Counſels, and undermine the beſt Inſtructions you can give them, and they will be all ſpilt like Water upon the barren Sands; they will have no Effect, they will bring forth no Fruit.

Good *Education* conſiſts further *in wiſe and early Reſtraints from that which is Evil, by ſeaſonable Reproof and Correction:* And this is alſo one way of Inſtruction: *Solomon* ſays, *the Rod and Reproof giveth Wiſdom.* Tho' both theſe do ſuppoſe a Fault that is paſt, yet the great End of them is to prevent the like for the future, and to be an Admonition to them for the time to come. And therefore whatever will probably be effectual for future

Caution

Caution and Amendment, ought to be ſufficient in thi kind, becauſe the End is always to give meaſure to th Means. And where a mild and gentle Rebuke will do the Buſineſs, Reproof may ſtop there without proceeding further; or when that will not do, if a ſharp Word, and a ſevere Admonition will be effectual, the *Rod* may be ſpar'd.

Provided always that your *Lenity* give no Encouragement to *Sin*, and be ſo managed, that *Children* may perceive that you are in good earneſt, and reſolved, that if they will not reform, they ſhall certainly be puniſh'd. And provided alſo, that your *Lenity* bear a due Proportion to the Nature and Quality of the Fault. We muſt not uſe Mildneſs in the Caſe of a wilful and hainous Sin, eſpecially if it be Exemplary, and of publick Influence. To rebuke gently upon ſuch an Occaſion, is rather to countenance the Fault, and ſeems to argue, that we are not ſenſible enough of the Enormities of it, and that we have not a due Diſlike and Deteſtation for it. Such cold Reproofs were thoſe which old *Eli* gave his Sons, *Why do you ſuch things? For I hear of your Evil doings by all this People*, that is, their Carriage was ſuch as gave publick Scandal. *Nay, my Sons, for it is not a good Report that I hear; you make the Lord's People to tranſgreſs.*

Such a cold Reproof as this, where the Crime was ſo great and notorious, was a kind of Allowance of it, and a partaking with them in their Sin. Thus God interprets it, and therefore calls it a kicking at his *Sacrifice, and a deſpiſing of his Offering:* For which he threatens *Eli* with moſt terrible Judgments, *Becauſe his Sons made themſelves vile and he reſtrain'd them not.*

Wherefore our Severity muſt be proportion'd to the Crime; when the Fault is great, the greater Severity muſt be uſed; ſo much at leaſt as may be an effectual Reſtraint for the future. Here was *Eli's* Miſcarriage, that in the Caſe of ſo great a Fault as his Sons were guilty of, his Proceeding was neither proportion'd to the

the Crime, nor to the End of Reproof and Correction, which is Amendment for the future; but he ſhew'd ſuch a Mildneſs in his Reproof of them, as was more apt to encourage, than reſtrain them in their vile Courſes.

There are indeed ſome Diſpoſitions ſo very tender and tractable, that gentle Reproof will ſuffice: But moſt *Children* are of that Temper, that Correction muſt be ſometimes us'd; and a fond Indulgence in this Caſe is many times their utter Ruin and Undoing; and in Effect is, not *Love*, but *Hatred*. *He that ſpareth the Rod, hateth his Son*, ſays the wiſe Man, *but he that loveth him chaſteneth him betimes. Chaſten thy Son while there is hope, and let not thy Soul ſpare for his crying.* Again, *Fooliſhneſs is bound up in the Heart of a Child, and the Rod of Correction ſhall drive it far from him. Withhold not Correction from the Child, for if thou beateſt him with the Rod he ſhall not die; thou ſhalt beat him with the Rod, and ſhalt deliver his Soul from Hell.* And again, *the Rod and Reproof give Wiſdom, but a Child left to himſelf bringeth his Mother to ſhame.* He mentions the *Mother* emphatically, becauſe ſhe many times is moſt faulty in this fond Indulgence, and therefore the Shame and Grief of it do juſtly fall upon her.

Correction then is of great Uſe, and often Neceſſary; and Parents that forbear it, are not only cruel to their Children, but to themſelves; for God often puniſhes thoſe *Parents* very ſeverely, who have neglected this neceſſary piece of *Diſcipline*. There is hardly to be found in *Scripture*, a more terrible temporal Threatning, than that concerning *Eli* and his Houſe, for his fond Indulgence to his Sons; who, when they came to be Men, proved ſuch horrible Scandals, not only to their Father, but to the Prieſt's Office, and to that degree, as *to make the Sacrifice of the Lord to be abhorred by all the People.* I will recite the Threatning at large, for an Admonition to *Parents*, that they be not guilty in this kind. *The Lord ſaid to* Samuel, *behold I will do a thing in* Iſrael *at which both the Ears of every one that heareth it, ſhall tingle.*

In

In that Day I will perform againſt Eli *all things which I have ſpoken concerning his Houſe; when I begin I will alſo make an End. For I have told him that I will judge his Houſe for ever, for the Iniquity which he knoweth, becauſe his Sons made themſelves vile, and he reſtrained them not. And therefore I have ſworn unto the Houſe of* Eli, *that the Iniquity of* Eli's *Houſe ſhall not be purged with Sacrifice nor Offering for ever.* I know very well that this enormous Wickedneſs of *Eli*'s Sons was committed by them after they were grown to be Men; but this Inſtance is nevertheleſs to our preſent purpoſe; there being hardly any doubt to be made, but that it was the natural Effect of a remiſs and too indulgent *Education.*

God very often does correct and remarkably puniſh fond *Parents*, by thoſe very *Children* who have wanted Reproof and Correction; of which the *Sacred Writ* gives us a remarkable Inſtance in *Adonijah*, upon the mention of whoſe Rebellion againſt *David* his Father, the Text takes particular notice of his Father's extreme Fondneſs of him, as both the procuring and meritorious Cauſe of it; *For his Father had not diſpleaſed him at any time in ſaying, why haſt thou done ſo?* The Son of *Sirach* tells us, that *he that chaſtiſeth his Son, ſhall have Joy of him.*

Another Duty of Parents very much of late neglected in the Education of their Children is, *the bringing them to be publickly Catechiſed by the Miniſter to prepare them for ſolemn Confirmation. Catechiſing* is, as every one knows, a particular way of teaching by Queſtion and Anſwer, accommodated and fitted for the Inſtruction of *Children* in the Principles of Religion. I do not find indeed that this particular Method is any where enjoin'd in Scripture, but *Inſtruction* in general is: And I doubt not but that upon this general Warrant, *Parents* and *Miniſters* may uſe that way of *Inſtruction* of *Children*, which is moſt fit and proper to inſtil into them the Principles of *Religion.* The Neceſſity and great Uſefulneſs of Catechiſing, appear from the particular Advantage

tâge it is of to Children, becauſe they are ſubject to Forgetfulneſs and want of Attention. Now Catechiſing is a good Remedy againſt both theſe, becauſe by *Queſtions* put to them, *Children* are forc'd to take notice of what is Taught, and muſt give ſome *Anſwer* to the *Queſtion* that is ask'd: And a *Catechiſm*, being ſhort, and containing in a little Compaſs the moſt neceſſary Principles of Religion, is the more eaſily remember'd.

It very ſeldom happens, that *Children* which have not been *Catechiz'd*, have any clear and competent Knowledge of the Principles of Religion; and for want of this, are incapable of receiving any great Benefit by *Sermons*, which ſuppoſe Perſons to be in ſome Meaſure inſtructed beforehand in the main Principles of Religion.

Beſides, if they have no Principles of Religion fix'd in them, they become an eaſy Prey to *Seducers:* And we had ſad Experience of this, among many other diſmal Effects of our Civil Confuſions: Publick Catechiſing became almoſt wholly diſus'd, and private too in many Families. Endeavours have been lately us'd, to revive ſo *Chriſtian* a Practice among the more ordinary ſort of People, but thoſe of a higher Rank diſdain to have their Children *Catechis'd* in publick by the Miniſter, as if they had not Souls to be ſaved as well as their *Inferiors*; as if the Earth was theirs, and Heaven belong'd literally to the *Poor*. Had *Catechiſing* of Children been continu'd, it is very probable that this Age would have been infected with fewer *Errors*, fewer *Schiſms*, and that there would not have been ſo much *Apoſtaſy* from the *Fundamentals* of Religion. For it is, I think, a true Obſervation, that *Catechiſing*, and the Hiſtory of the *Martyrs*, have been the two great *Pillars* of the *Proteſtant* Religion.

There being then ſo great a Neceſſity and Uſefulneſs of this way of *Inſtruction*, *Parents*, and *Maſters* of *Families* ſhould certainly take great care to practiſe it with reſpect to their *Children* and *Servants*. This Work

ſhould

ſhould not lie wholly on *Miniſters*, you muſt do your Part at home, who by your conſtant Reſidence in your *Families*, have better and more eaſy Opportunities of inculcating the Principles of Religion upon your *Children* and *Servants:* You muſt there prepare them for publick *Catechiſing*, that the Work of the *Miniſter* may not be heavy upon him.

The laſt thing to be conſider'd, towards the Diſcharge of the Duty incumbent on Parents to give their Children a Religious Education, is the *bringing of them to the Biſhop to be ſolemnly Confirm'd*, by their taking upon themſelves the *Vow*, which, by their Sureties, they enter'd into at their *Baptiſm*.

This is acknowledg'd by almoſt all *Sects* and *Parties* of Chriſtians, to be of *Primitive* Antiquity, and of very great *Uſe*, when it is perform'd with that due Preparation of Perſons for it, by the Miniſters to whoſe Charge they belong, and with that Seriouſneſs and Solemnity, which the Nature of the thing does require.

And to that End, it were very deſirable, that *Confirmations* ſhould be more frequent, and in ſmaller Numbers at a time, that ſo the Biſhop may apply himſelf more particularly to every Perſon that is to be *Confirm'd*, that by this means the thing may make the deeper Impreſſion, and lay the ſtronger Obligation upon them.

One thing more were to be wiſh'd, both to prevent Confuſion, and for the Eaſe alſo of the *Biſhop*, that his Work may not be endleſs, that *Miniſters* would take care, that none may preſent themſelves to the Biſhop, or be preſented by the *Miniſters*, to be *confirm'd* a ſecond time; becauſe a great many are wont to offer themſelves every time there is a *Confirmation*; which is both very diſorderly and unreaſonable, there being every whit as little Reaſon for a *ſecond Confirmation*, as there is for a *ſecond Baptiſm:* And if any Perſon need ſo often to be *confirm'd*, it is a ſign that *Confirmation* has very little effect upon him.

All *Fathers* and *Mothers* muſt endeavour, in the *Education* of their *Children*, to diſcover their particular *Temper* and *Diſpoſition*, that they may ſuit and apply themſelves to it, and by ſtriking in with Nature, may ſteer and govern them in the ſweeteſt and eaſieſt way. This is like Knowledge of the Nature of the Ground to be planted, which *Husbandmen* are wont very carefully to enquire into, that they may apply the *Seed* to the *Soil*, and plant in it that which is moſt proper for it.

Every *Soil* is not proper for all ſorts of *Grain* or *Fruit*; one Ground is fit for *Corn*, another for *Vines:* And ſo it is in the *Temper* and *Diſpoſition* of *Children:* Some are more capable of one *Excellency* and *Virtue* than another, and ſome more ſtrongly inclin'd to one *Vice* than another; which is a great *Secret* of *Nature* and *Providence*, and it is very hard to give a juſt and ſatisfactory Account of it.

'Tis good therefore to know the particular Tempers of *Children*, that we may accordingly apply our Care to them, and manage them to the beſt Advantage. Thus when we diſcern in them any forward Inclinations to *Good*, we may caſt in ſuch *Seeds* and *Principles*, as by their Suitableneſs to their particular *Tempers* we judge moſt likely to take ſound and deepeſt Root. And when theſe are grown up, and have taken poſſeſſion of the *Soil*, they will prepare it for the Seeds of other Virtues.

And ſo alſo when we diſcover in their Nature a more particular Diſpoſition and Leaning towards any thing which is bad, we muſt with great Diligence and Care apply ſuch Inſtructions, and plant ſuch Principles in them, as may be moſt effectual to alter this evil Diſpoſition of their Minds; that while Nature is tender and flexible, we may gently bend it the other way: And it is almoſt incredible what ſtrange things by Prudence and Patience may be done, towards the rectifying a very perverſe and crooked Diſpoſition.

This makes it of a very great Uſe to obſerve and diſcover the particular *Tempers* of *Children*, that in all our

Inſtructions

Inſtructions and Management of them, we may apply ourſelves to their Nature, and hit their peculiar Diſpoſition: By this means we may lead and draw them to their *Duty* in human ways, and ſuch as are much more agreeable to their Temper than Conſtraint and Neceſſity, which are Harſh, Churliſh, and againſt the Grain. Whatever is done with Delight goes on chearfully; but when Nature is compell'd and forc'd, things proceed heavily; Therefore when we are forming and faſhioning *Children* to Religion and Virtue, we ſhould make all the Advantage we can of their particular Tempers: This will be a good Direction and Help to us to conduct Nature in the way it will moſt eaſily go. Every Temper gives ſome particular Advantage and *Handle*, by which we may take hold of them and ſteer them more eaſily; but if we take a contrary courſe, we muſt expect to meet with great Difficulty and Reluctancy.

Such ways of Education as are prudently fitted to the particular Diſpoſition of Children, are like *Wind* and *Tide* together, which will make our Work go on amain. But thoſe Ways and Methods which are apply'd croſs to Nature, are like *Wind* againſt *Tide*, they make a great Stir and Conflict, but a very ſlow progreſs: Not that one can expect all *Parents* ſhould be *Philoſophers*, but that they ſhould uſe the beſt Wiſdom they have in a matter of ſo great Concernment.

In your Inſtruction of Children, endeavour to plant in them thoſe *Principles* of Religion and Virtue which are moſt Subſtantial, and are like to have the beſt Influence upon the future Government of their Lives, and to be of continual and laſting uſe to them. Look to the *Seed* you ſow, that it be ſound and good, and for the Benefit and Uſe of Mankind; this is to be regarded, as well as the *Ground* into which the Seed is caſt.

Labour to beget in Children a right Apprehenſion of thoſe things which are moſt Fundamental and Neceſſary to the Knowledge of God and their Duty, and to make them ſenſible of the great Evil and Danger of Sin,

and

and to work in them a firm Belief of the next Life, and of the Eternal Rewards and Puniſhments of it. If theſe *Principles* once take *Root*, they will ſpread far and wide, and have a vaſt Influence upon all their Actions; and unleſs ſome powerful Luſt or Temptation to Vice hurry them away, they will probably accompany them, and ſtick by them as long as they live.

Many *Parents*, according to their beſt Knowledge and Apprehenſions of Religion, in which they themſelves have been educated, and too often, according to their Zeal without Knowledge, do take great care to plant little and ill-grounded *Opinions* in the Minds of their *Children*, and to faſhion them to a *Party*, by infuſing into them the particular Notions and Phraſes of a *Sect*, which, when they come to be examin'd, have no Subſtance, nor perhaps Senſe in them: And by this means, inſtead of bringing them up in the true and ſolid Principles of *Chriſtianity*, they take a great deal of Pains to inſtruct them in ſome doubtful Doctrines of no great Moment in Religion, and perhaps falſe at bottom: by which, inſtead of teaching them to hate *Sin*, they fix them in *Schiſm*, and teach them to hate and damn all thoſe that differ from them, and are oppoſite to them; who yet are perhaps much more in the *Right*, and far better *Chriſtians* than themſelves.

Indeed nothing is more common, and more to be pitied, than to ſee with what a confident Contempt and ſcornful Pity ſome ill-inſtructed and ignorant People will lament the Blindneſs and Ignorance of thoſe who have a thouſand times more true Knowledge and Skill than themſelves, not only in all other things, but even in the Practice as well as Knowledge of the Chriſtian Religion; believing thoſe who do not reliſh their affected Phraſes and uncouth Forms of Speech, to be ignorant of the *Myſtery* of the *Goſpel*, and utter Strangers to the Life and Power of Godlineſs.

But now, what is the Effect of this miſtaken way of *Education?* The *Harveſt* is juſt anſwerable to the *Huſ-*

bandry:

bandry: As they have ſown, ſo they muſt expect to reap, and inſtead of good Grain, to have Cockle and *Tares. They have ſown the Wind, and they ſhall reap the Whirlwind.* Inſtead of true *Religion*, and of a ſober peaceable Converſation, there will come up new and wild Opinions, a factious and uncharitable Spirit, a furious and boiſterous Zeal, which will neither ſuffer themſelves to be quiet, nor any body that is about them.

But if you deſire to reap the Effects of true Piety and Religion, you muſt take care to plant in Children the main and ſubſtantial Principles of *Chriſtianity*; which may give them a general Bias to Holineſs and Goodneſs, and not to little particular Opinions, which being once fix'd in them by the ſtrong Prejudice of *Education*, will hardly ever by rooted out.

Do all that in you lies to check and diſcourage in them the firſt Beginnings of *Sin* and *Vice*; pluck them up by the Roots, ſo ſoon as ever they appear; this is like the weeding of *Corn*, which is a neceſſary piece of good Husbandry. *Vices*, like *ill Weeds*, grow apace, and if they once take to the Soil, it will be hard to extirpate and kill them; but if we watch them, and cut them up as ſoon as they appear, this will diſcourage the Root and make it die.

Therefore take great heed, that your Children be not habituated and accuſtomed to any evil Courſe. A Vice that is of any conſiderable Growth and Continuance will ſoon grow obſtinate, and having once ſpread its Roots, it will be a very difficult Matter to clear the Ground of it; a Child may be ſo long neglected 'till he be overgrown with Vice to that degree, that it may be out of the Power of *Parents* ever to bring him to good Fruit. If it once gain upon the deprav'd Diſpoſition of *Children*, it will be one of the hardeſt Things in the World to give a ſtop to it; we are caution'd to *take heed of being harden'd by the Deceitfulneſs of Sin*, which they who go on in an evil Courſe will moſt certainly be; we ſhould obſerve the firſt Appearances of Evil in *Children*,

and

and kill theſe young Serpents as ſoon as they ſtir, leſt they bite to Death.

When they are capable of it, bring them to the *publick Worſhip of God*, where he has promis'd his more eſpecial Preſence. It is in *Zion*, the place of *God*'s publick Worſhip, *where the Lord hath commanded the Bleſſing, even Life for evermore*. Theſe are the Means which God has appointed for the Beginning, and Increaſing of *Grace* in us. This is the *Pool*, where the Angel uſes to come, and to *move the Waters*; carry your Children thither, where, if they diligently attend, they may meet with an Opportunity of being *healed*.

When they cõme from *Church*, call them frequently to an account of what they have heard and learn'd there; this will make them both to attend more diligently to what they hear, and to lay it up in their *Memories* with greater Care; which will ſo fix it there, as to make a deeper and more laſting Impreſſion upon their Minds.

Be careful more eſpecially to put them upon the Exerciſe and Practice of Religion and Virtue, in ſuch Inſtances as their Underſtanding and Age are capable of: Teach them ſome ſhort and proper Forms of *Prayer* to *God*, to be ſaid by them devoutly upon their Knees in private, at leaſt every Morning and Evening. A great many *Children* neglect this, not from any ill Diſpoſition of Mind, but becauſe no body takes care to teach them how to do it: and if they were taught and put upon doing it, the Habit and Cuſtom of any thing will after a little while make that eaſy and delightful enough, which they cannot at firſt be brought to, without great Difficulty and Reluctance.

Knowledge and *Practice* do mutually promote and help forward one another: Knowledge prepares and diſpoſes for Practice, and Practice is the beſt way to perfect Knowledge in any kind. Mere *Speculation* is a very raw and rude thing, in Compariſon of true and diſtinct Knowledge, which is gotten by *Practice* and Experience,

The

The moſt exact Skill in *Geography* is nothing, compared with the Knowledge of that Man, who, beſides the ſpeculative Part, has travell'd over and carefully view'd the Countries he has read of; the moſt knowing Man in the Art and Rules of *Navigation*, is no Body in Compariſon of an experienced Pilot and Seaman; becauſe Knowledge perfected by Practice is as much different from mere Speculation, as the Skill of doing a thing, is from being told how a thing is to be done. For Men may eaſily miſtake *Rules*, but frequent Practice and Experience are ſeldom deceiv'd. Give me a Man that conſtantly does a thing well, and that ſhall ſatisfy me that he knows how to do it. That Saying of our *Saviour*, *If any Man will do my Will, he ſhall know of the Doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I ſpeak of myſelf*, is a clear Demonſtration of this Matter, that they underſtand the Will of God beſt who are moſt careful to do it; and ſo alſo the beſt way to know what God is, is to tranſcribe his Perfections into our Lives and Actions, to be *Holy*, and *Juſt*, and *Good*, and *Merciful*, as he is.

Therefore when the Minds of *Children* are once thoroughly poſſeſt with the true *Principles* of Religion, we ſhould bend all our Endeavours to put them upon the Practice of what they know. Let them rather be taught to do well than to talk well; rather to avoid what is evil, in all its ſhapes and appearances, and to practiſe their Duty in the ſeveral Inſtances of it, than to *ſpeak with the Tongues of Men and Angels. Unto Man he ſaid, Behold the fear of the Lord, that is Wiſdom, and to depart from Evil is Underſtanding. Hereby*, ſays St. *John*, *we know that we love him, if we keep his Commandments; he that ſaith, I know him, and keepeth not his Commandments, is a Lyar, and the Truth is not in him.*

Xenophon tells us, that the *Perſians*, inſtead of making their *Children* learned, taught them to be Virtuous; and, inſtead of filling their Heads with fine *Speculations*, taught them *Honeſty*, *Sincerity*, and *Reſolution*, and endeavour'd to make them *Wiſe*, *Valiant*, Juſt, and Temperate.

rate. *Lycurgus* alſo in the Inſtitution of the *Lacedemonian* Commonwealth, took no Care about Learning, but only about the Lives and Manners of their *Children*; Tho' I ſhould think the Care of both is beſt, and therefore, with the Leave of ſo great and wiſe a *Lawgiver*, I cannot but think that this was a Defect in his *Inſtitution*: Becauſe Learning, if it be under the Conduct of true Wiſdom and Goodneſs, is not only an Ornament, but a great Advantage to the better Government of any Kingdom or Commonwealth.

Great Care and Diligence muſt be us'd in this whole Buſineſs of *Education*, and more particularly in the *Inſtruction* of *Children*; the Principles of Religion and Virtue muſt be inſtilled and dropt into them, by ſuch Degrees and in ſuch a Meaſure, as they are capable of receiving them; for *Children* are narrow-mouth'd Veſſels, and a great deal cannot be pour'd into them at once.

They muſt alſo be accuſtom'd to the Practice and Exerciſe of Religion and Goodneſs by degrees, 'till Holineſs and Virtue have taken Root, and they be well ſettled and confirm'd in a good Courſe. Now this requires conſtant Attendance, and even the Patience of the Husbandman, to wait for the Fruit of our Labours.

In ſome *Children* the Seeds that are ſown fall into a greater Depth of Earth, and therefore are of a ſlow Diſcloſure, and it may be a conſiderable time before they appear above Ground. 'Tis long before they ſhoot and grow up to any Height, and yet they may afterwards every way extend themſelves; which, as an ingenious Author obſerves, ſhould excite *the Care and prevent the Deſpair* of *Parents*; for if their *Children* be not ſuch ſpeedy Spreaders and Branchers as the *Vine*, they may perhaps prove like the *Olive* that is long in growing, but in its Maturity is abundantly fruitful.

'Tis a Work of great Pains and Difficulty to rectify a perverſe Diſpoſition; 'tis more eaſy to *palliate* the Corruption of Nature, but the Cure of it requires Time and

and careful looking to; an Evil Temper and Inclination may be cover'd and conceal'd, but it is a great Work to conquer and ſubdue it. It muſt firſt be check'd and ſtop'd in its Courſe, and then weaken'd and the force of it be broken by Degrees, and at laſt, if it be poſſible, deſtroyed and rooted out.

To all theſe Means we muſt add our conſtant and earneſt Prayers to God for our *Children*, that his *Grace* may take an early Poſſeſſion of them; that he would give them virtuous Inclinations, and towardly Diſpoſitions for Goodneſs; and that he would be pleas'd to accompany all our Endeavours to that End with his powerful Aſſiſtance and Bleſſing, without which all we can do will prove ineffectual.

Be often then upon your Knees for your *Children*, do not only teach them to pray for themſelves, but do you alſo with great Fervour and Earneſtneſs *commend them to God*, and *to the Power of his Grace*, which alone is able to ſanctify them. Beg his Holy Spirit, and ask Divine Knowledge and Wiſdom for them of him, *who giveth to all liberally, and upbraideth not*; beſeech him to ſeaſon their tender Years with his *Fear*, which is the *beginning of Wiſdom*; pray for them, as *Abraham* did for *Iſhmael*, *O that Iſhmael may live in thy ſight*.

Many *Parents*, having found all their Endeavours for a long time together ineffectual, have at length betaken themſelves to Prayer, earneſt and importunate *Prayer* to *God* as their laſt Refuge. *Monica*, the Mother of St. *Auſtin*, by the Conſtancy and Importunity of her Prayers, obtain'd of God the Converſion of her Son, who prov'd afterwards ſo great and glorious an Inſtrument of Good to the *Church* of *God:* According to what St. *Ambroſe* Biſhop of *Milan*, to encourage her to perſevere in her fervent *Prayers* for her Son, had ſaid to her, *It cannot be, that a Son of ſo many Prayers and Tears ſhould miſcarry*. God's Grace is free, but it is not likely but that God will at laſt give his Bleſſing to our earneſt Prayers and faithful Endeavours.

I am

I am ſatisfy'd there are a great many People who will have no Reliſh for ſuch ſerious and religious Leſſons, and will prefer thoſe Parts of this Diſcourſe, in which the Subject is treated of with reſpect more to the *Moral* than the *Chriſtian* Life; others there are who will take theſe Rules for Education to be too *General*, and deſire that in a Matter of ſo great Importance, we had yet been more particular in giving the *Mother* Directions for the Diſcharge of the Truſt committed to her by God and Nature, in the Well-breeding up of her *Children*. To give the latter Satisfaction, we ſhall employ ſtill a few Pages more on this Subject, endeavour to ſearch it to the Bottom, and diſcover all the Secrets of it, for the Uſe of wiſe, virtuous, and tender *Parents*.

Mens Happineſs or Miſery is, for the moſt part, of their own making. He whoſe *Mind* directs not wiſely, will never take the right ways; and he whoſe *Body* is craſy and feeble, will never be able to advance in it. I confeſs there are ſome Mens Conſtitutions of *Body* and *Mind* ſo Vigorous, and well form'd by Nature, that they need not much Aſſiſtance from others; but by the ſtrength of their natural Genius, they are from their *Cradles* carry'd towards what is Excellent, and by the Privilege of their happy Conſtitutions are able to do Wonders; but Examples of this kind are but few, and I think, I may ſay, that of all the Men we meet with, nine Parts of ten are what they are, good or evil, uſeful or not, by their *Education*. 'Tis that which makes the great Difference in Mankind. The little or almoſt inſenſible Impreſſions on our tender Infancies, have very important and laſting Conſequences. And there 'tis, as in the Fountains of ſome Rivers, where a gentle Application of the Hand turns the flexible Waters into Channels, that make them take quite contrary Courſes, and by this little Direction given them at firſt in the Source, they receive different Tendencies, and arrive at laſt at very remote and diſtant Places.

I imagine the Minds of *Children* as eaſily turn'd this or that way as Water itſelf; and tho' this be the principal Part, and our main Care ſhould be about the Inſide, yet the Clay-Cottage is not to be neglected. I ſhall therefore treat of the *Caſe* in which the *Mind* is incloſed, and conſider the *Health* of the *Body*. How neceſſary *Health* is to our Buſineſs and Happineſs, and how requiſite a ſtrong Conſtitution, able to endure Hardſhips and Fatigues, is to one that will make any Figure in the World, is too obvious to need any Proof.

The Conſideration I ſhall here have of *Health*, ſhall be, not what a *Phyſician* ought to do with a ſick or craſy *Child*, but what the *Parents*, without the help of Phyſick ſhould do for the *Preſervation* and *Improvement of an healthy*, or at leaſt not *ſickly Conſtitution* in their Children; and this perhaps might be all diſpatch'd in this one ſhort Rule; that Gentlemen ſhould uſe their *Children*, as the honeſt Farmer and ſubſtantial Yeomen do theirs. But becauſe the *Mothers* may poſſibly think this a little too hard, and the *Fathers* too ſhort, I ſhall explain myſelf more particularly, only laying down this as a general and certain Obſervation for the *Women* to conſider, that moſt *Childrens* Conſtitutions are either ſpoil'd, or at leaſt harm'd, by *Cockering* and *Tenderneſs*.

The firſt thing to be taken care of is, that *Children* be not too *warmly Clad or Cover'd*, Winter or Summer. The *Face*, when we are born, is no leſs tender than any other part of the *Body*, 'tis Uſe alone hardens it, and makes it more able to endure the Cold: And therefore the *Scythian* Philoſopher gave a very ſignificant Anſwer to the *Athenian*, who wonder'd how he cou'd go naked in *Froſt* and *Snow*: *How*, ſaid the *Scythian*, *can you endure your Face expos'd to the ſharp Winter Air? My Face is us'd to it*, ſaid the *Athenian*. *Think me all Face*, reply'd the *Scythian*. Our Bodies will endure any thing which they are accuſtom'd to from the beginning.

An eminent Inſtance of this, tho' in the contrary Exceſs of Heat, being to our preſent Purpoſe, to ſhew what

what Uſe can do, I ſhall ſet down in the Author's Words, as I meet with it in a large ingenious Voyage. "The "Heats, *ſays he*, are more violent in *Malta* than in any "part of *Europe*. They exceed thoſe of *Rome* itſelf, "and are perfectly ſtifling, and ſo much the more be- "cauſe there are ſeldom any cooling Breezes there. "This makes the common People as black as *Gypſies*. "But yet the Peaſants defy the *Sun*. They work on "in the hotteſt part of the Day without Intermiſſion, "or ſheltering themſelves from his ſcorching Rays. "This has convinced me that Nature can bring her- "ſelf to many things which ſeem impoſſible, provided "we accuſtom ourſelves from our *Infancy*; the *Mal-* "*teſes* do ſo, who harden the Bodies of their *Children*, "and reconcile them to the *Heat*, by making them go "ſtark naked, without Shirt, Drawers, or any thing "on their Heads, from their *Cradles*, 'till they are ten "Years old."

Give me leave therefore to adviſe you, not to fence too carefully againſt the Cold of this our *Climate*; there are thoſe in *England* who wear the ſame Clothes Winter and Summer, and that without any Inconvenience or more Senſe of Cold than others find; but if the *Mother* will needs have an Allowance for *Froſt* and *Snow* for fear of Harm, and the *Father* for fear of Cenſure, be ſure let not his Winter Clothing be too warm, and among other Things remember, that when Nature has ſo well cover'd his *Head* with *Hair*, and ſtrengthen'd it with a Year or two's Age, that he can run about by *Day* without a *Cap*, it is beſt that by *Night* a *Child* ſhould alſo lie without one, there being nothing that more expoſes to *Head-Achs*, *Colds*, *Catarrhs*, *Coughs*, and ſeveral other Diſeaſes, than keeping the *Head warm*.

I have, ſaid *he* in this Place, becauſe my principal Aim in the following Part of my Diſcourſe, will be how a *young Gentleman* ſhould be brought up from his *Infancy*, which in all things will not ſo perfectly ſuit the Education of Daughters: I have treated of that amply

enough already, and where the Difference of *Sex* requires different Treatment, 'twill be no hard Matter to diſtinguiſh.

I would alſo adviſe his *Feet* to be waſhed every Day in *cold Water*, and to have his Shoes ſo thin, that they may leak and *let in the Water*, whenever he comes near it. Here I fear I ſhall have the *Miſtreſs* and the *Maids* againſt me; one will think it too filthy, and the other perhaps too much Pains to make clean his Stockings; but yet Truth will have it, that his *Health* is much more worth than all ſuch Conſiderations; yea ten times as much more; and he that conſiders how miſchievous and mortal a thing taking *Wet* in the *Feet* is to thoſe who have been bred nicely, will wiſh he had with the poor Peoples *Children* gone *barefoot*, who by that Means come to be ſo reconcil'd by Cuſtom to *Wet* in their *Feet*; that they take no more cold or harm by it, than if they were *wet* in their *Hands*. And what is it, I pray, that makes this great difference between the *Hands* and the *Feet* in others, but only Cuſtom? I doubt not if a Man had been always us'd to go *barefoot* from his *Cradle*; while his *Hands* were conſtantly wrapt up in warm Mittins, and cover'd with *Hand ſhoes*, as the *Dutch* call *Gloves*; I doubt not, I ſay, ſuch a Cuſtom would make taking *Wet* in his *Hands* as dangerous to him, as now taking *Wet* in their *Feet* is to a great many others. The way to prevent this is to have his *Shoes* made ſo as to *leak Water*, and his *Feet* waſh'd conſtantly every Day in *cold Water*; it is recommendable for its Cleanlineſs, but that which I aim at in it is *Health*, and therefore I limit it not preciſely to any time of the *Day*. I have known it us'd every *Night* with very good Succeſs, and that all the *Winter*, without the omitting it one Night in extreme *cold* Weather. When thick Ice cover'd the Water, the Child bath'd his *Legs* and *Feet* in it, tho' he was of an Age not big enough to rub and wipe them himſelf, and when he began this Cuſtom was puling and very tender; but the great End being to harden

thoſe

thoſe by a frequent and familiar Uſe of cold Water, and thereby to prevent the Miſchiefs that uſually attend accidental taking *Wet* in the *Feet*, in thoſe who are bred otherwiſe, I think it may be left to the Prudence and Convenience of *Parents*, to chooſe either *Night* or *Morning*; the time I deem indifferent, ſo the thing be effectually done. The *Health* and Hardineſs procur'd by it, would be a good Purchaſe at a much dearer Rate; to which if I add the preventing of *Corns*, that to ſome Men would be a very valuable Conſideration. But begin firſt in the Spring with *Lukewarm*, and ſo *colder* and *colder* every time, 'till in a few Days you come to perfectly *cold Water*, and then continue it ſo *Winter* and *Summer*; for it is to be obſerv'd in this, as in all other *Alterations* from our ordinary way of living, the Changes muſt be made by gentle and inſenſible Degrees, and ſo we may bring our Bodies to any thing without Pain, and without Danger.

How fond *Mothers* are like to receive this Doctrine, is not hard to foreſee; what can it be leſs than to murder their tender *Babes*, to uſe them thus? What! put their Feet into cold Water, in *Froſt* and *Snow*, when all one can do is little enough to keep them warm? A little to remove their *Fears* by Examples, without which the plaineſt Reaſon is ſeldom hearken'd to, *Seneca* tells us of himſelf, that he us'd to bathe himſelf in cold Spring Water in the midſt of Winter. This if he had not thought it not only Tolerable but Healthy too, he would ſcarce have done in an Exuberant Fortune, that could well have born the Expence of a warm Bath, and in an Age (for he was then old) that would have excuſed greater Indulgence: If we think his *Stoical* Principles led him to Severity, let it be ſo, that this *Sect* reconciled cold *Water* to his Sufferance; what made it agreeable to his Health? for that was not impair'd by this hard Uſage. But what ſhall we ſay to *Horace*, who valued not himſelf on the Reputation of any *Sect*, and leaſt of all affected Stoical *Auſterities*? Yet he aſſures us,

he was wont in the Winter Seaſon to bathe himſelf in cold Water. But perhaps *Italy* will be thought much warmer than *England*, and the Chilneſs of their *Waters* not come near ours in *Winter*. If the Rivers of *Italy* are warmer, thoſe of *Germany* and *Poland* are much colder, than any in this our Country, and yet in theſe the *Jews*, both *Men* and *Women*, bathe all over at all Seaſons of the Year, without any Prejudice to their *Health*. And every one is not apt to believe it is a Miracle, or any peculiar Virtue of St. *Winefred*'s *Well*, that makes the *cold* Waters of that famous Spring do no harm to the tender Bodies that bathe in it. Every one is now full of the Miracles done by *cold Baths*, on decay'd and weak Conſtitutions, for the Recovery of *Health* and *Strength*; and therefore they cannot be impracticable or intolerable, for the improving and hardening the Bodies of thoſe who are in better Circumſtances.

If theſe Examples of *grown Men* be not thought yet to reach the Caſe of *Children*, but that they may be judg'd ſtill to be too tender and unable to bear ſuch Uſage, let them examine what the *Germans* of old, and the *Iriſh* now do to them, and they will find that *Infants* too, as tender as they are thought, may without any danger endure bathing, not only of their *Feet*, but of their whole Bodies in cold Water. And there are at this Day *Ladies* in the Highlands of *Scotland*, who uſe this Diſcipline to their *Children* in the midſt of *Winter*, and find that *cold Water* does them no harm.

I ſhall not need here to mention *Swimming*, when he is of an Age able to learn, and has any one to teach him; 'tis that ſaves many a Man's Life, and the *Romans* thought it ſo neceſſary, that they rank'd it with Letters. It was the common Phraſe to mark one ill-educated and good for nothing, that he had neither learnt to *read* nor to *ſwim*; but beſides the gaining a Skill which may ſerve him at need, the Advantages to Health, by often *bathing in cold Water* during the *Heat of Summer*, are ſo many, that I think nothing need to be ſaid to encou-

rage

rage it, provided this one Caution be uſed, that he never go into Water, when Exerciſe has at all warm'd him, or left any Emotion in his Blood or Pulſe.

Another thing that is of great Advantage to every ones Health, but eſpecially Childrens, is to be much in the *open Air*; and very little as may be by the Fire even in Winter; by this he will accuſtom himſelf alſo to *Heat* and *Cold*, *Shine* and *Rain*, all which if a Man's Body will not endure, it will ſerve him to very little Purpoſe in this World; and when he is grown up, it is too late to begin to uſe him to it; it muſt be got early and by degrees. Then the Body may be brought to bear almoſt any thing. If I ſhould adviſe him to play in the *Wind* and the *Sun* without a *Hat*, I doubt whether it would be born, there would a thouſand Objections be made againſt it, which at laſt would amount to no more in truth, than being *Sun-burnt*. And if my young Maſter be to be kept always in the *Shade* for fear of his Complexion, and never be expos'd to the *Sun* and *Wind*, it may be a good way to make him a *Beau*, but not a Man of Buſineſs. And tho' greater Regard be to be had to *Beauty* in the *Daughters*, yet I will take the Liberty to ſay, without Prejudice to their *Faces*, the ſtronger and healthfuller they will be; and the nearer they come to the Hardſhips of their Brothers in their Education, the greater Advantage will they receive from it all the remaining part of their Lives.

Playing in the *open Air* has but this one Danger in it that I know, and that is, that when he is hot with running up and down, he ſhou'd ſit or lie down on the cold or moiſt Earth: This, I grant, and drinking *cold Water*, brings more People to the Grave, or to the brink of it, by Fevers or other Diſeaſes, than any thing I know. Theſe Miſchiefs are eaſily enough prevented while he is little, being then ſeldom out of ſight; and if during his *Childhood* he be conſtantly and rigorouſly kept from ſitting on the Ground, or drinking any *cold* Liquor while he is *Hot*, the *Cuſtom* of forbearing grown into

Habit will help much to preſerve him when he is no longer under his *Maid*'s or *Tutor*'s Eye. This is all I think can be done in the caſe; for as Years increaſe, Liberty muſt come with them, and in a great many things he muſt be truſted to his own Conduct, ſince they cannot always be a Guard upon him, except what you have put into his own Mind by good Principles and eſtabliſh'd *Habits*, which is the beſt and ſureſt Guide, and therefore moſt to be taken care of; for from repeated Cautions and Rules never ſo often inculcated, you are not to expect any thing, either in this or any other Caſe, farther than *Practice* has eſtabliſh'd them into *Habits*.

One thing the mention of the Girls brings into my *Mind*, which muſt not be forgot, and that is that your Son's *Clothes* be never made *ſtrait*, eſpecially about the *Breaſt*; let Nature have ſcope to faſhion the *Body* as ſhe thinks fit; ſhe works of herſelf a great deal better and exacter than we can direct her. And if Women were themſelves to frame the *Bodies* of their *Children* in their *Wombs*, as they often endeavour to mend their *Shapes* when they are out, we ſhould as certainly have no perfect *Children* born, as we have few *well-ſhaped*, that are *ſtrait-lac'd*, and much tamper'd with. This Conſideration ſhould, methinks, keep buſy People, I will not ſay ignorant *Nurſes* and *Bodice-makers*, from meddling in a Matter they underſtand not; and they ſhould be afraid of putting Nature out of her way in faſhioning the Parts, when they know not how the leaſt and meaneſt is made. And yet I have ſeen ſo many Inſtances of *Children* receiving great harm from *ſtrait lacing*, that I cannot but conclude, there are other Creatures as well as *Monkeys*, who, little wiſer than they, deſtroy their young Ones by ſenſeleſs Fondneſs, and too much embracing.

Narrow Breaſts, ſhort and ſtinking Breath, ill Lungs, and Crookedneſs, are the natural and almoſt conſtant Effect of hard *Bodice* and *Clothes* that pinch; that way of making ſlender *Waſtes* and fine *Shapes*, ſerves but the

more

more effectually to ſpoil them. Nor can there indeed but be Diſproportion in the Parts, when the Nouriſhment prepared in the ſeveral Offices of the *Body*, cannot be diſtributed as Nature deſigns; and therefore what wonder is it, if it being laid where it can, on ſome part not ſo brac'd, it often makes a *Shoulder* or a *Hip* higher or bigger than its juſt Proportion? 'Tis generally known that the *Women* in *China*, imagining I know not what kind of Beauty in it, by bracing and binding them hard from their Infancy, have very little *Feet*. I ſaw lately a pair of *China* Shoes, which I was told were for a *grown Woman*; they were ſo exceedingly diſproportion'd to the *Feet* of one of the ſame Age among us, that they would ſcarce have been big enough for one of our little *Girls*. Beſides this, 'tis obſerved that their *Women* are alſo very little and ſhort-liv'd; whereas the Men are of the ordinary Stature of other Men, and live to a proportionable Age. The *Defects* in the Female Sex in that Country are by ſome imputed to the unreaſonable binding of their Feet, by which the free *Circulation* of the *Blood* is hinder'd, and the Growth and Health of the whole Body ſuffer. How often do we ſee that ſome ſmall part of the *Foot* being injur'd by a *Wrench* or a *Blow*, the whole *Leg* or *Thigh* loſes by it their Strength and Nouriſhment, and dwindle away? How much greater Inconveniences may we expect when the *Breaſt*, within which is placed the *Heart* and Seat of Life, is unnaturally compreſt and hinder'd from its due Expanſion?

As for his *Diet*, it ought to be very plain and ſimple; and if I might adviſe, *Fleſh* ſhould be forborn as long as he is in *Coats*, or at leaſt 'till he is two or three Years old. But whatever Advantage this may be to his preſent and future *Health* and *Strength*, I fear it will hardly be conſented to by *Parents*, miſled by the Cuſtom of eating too much Fleſh themſelves; who will be apt to think their *Children*, as they do themſelves, in danger to be ſtarved, if they have not Fleſh at leaſt twice a Day. This I am ſure of, *Children* would breed their *Teeth*

with leſs Danger, be freer from Diſeaſes while they are little, and lay the Foundation of an Healthy and Strong Conſtitution much ſurer, if they were not cramm'd ſo much as they are by *fond* Mothers and *fooliſh* Servants, and were kept wholly from *Fleſh*, the firſt three or four Years of their Lives.

But if my *Young Maſter* muſt needs have *Fleſh*, let it be but once a Day, and of one ſort at a *Meal*: Plain *Beef*, *Mutton*, *Veal*, &c. without other Sauce than Hunger, is beſt; and great care ſhould be us'd that he eat *Bread* plentifully, both alone and with every thing elſe; and whatever he eats that is ſolid make him chew it well. The *Engliſh* are often negligent herein; from whence follow *Indigeſtion* and other great Inconveniences.

For *Breakfaſt* and *Supper*, *Milk*, *Milk-Pottage*, *Water-Gruel*, and *Flummery*, and twenty other things that we are wont to make in *England*, are very fit for *Children*; only in all theſe let care be taken, that they be plain, without much mixture, and very ſparingly ſeaſon'd with *Sugar*, or rather none at all; eſpecially all *Spice* and other things that may heat the Blood, are carefully to be avoided. Be ſparing alſo of Salt in the ſeaſoning of all his *Victuals*, and uſe him not to high-ſeaſon'd *Meats*. Our *Palates* grow into a reliſh and liking of the *Seaſoning* and *Cookery*, which by Cuſtom they are ſet to; and an over-much uſe of Salt, beſides that it occaſions *Thirſt*, and even much drinking, has other ill Effects upon the Body. I ſhould think that a good piece of well-made and well-bak'd *Brown Bread*, ſometimes with, and ſometimes without *Butter* or *Cheeſe*, would be often the beſt *Breakfaſt* for my *young Maſter*; I am ſure 'tis wholſom, and will make him as ſtrong a Man, as greater *Delicacies*: And if he be us'd to it, 'twill be as pleaſant to him. If he at any time calls for *Victuals* between *Meals*, uſe him to nothing but Bread; If he be *hungry* more than *wanton*, Bread itſelf will down; and if he be not *hungry*, 'tis not fit he ſhould *eat*. By this he will come to be in love with *Bread*; for, as I ſaid, our *Palates*

and

and *Stomachs* too are pleas'd with the things we are us'd to. By this alſo he will be taught to eat no more and no oftner than Nature requires. I do not think that all Peoples Appetites are alike: Some have naturally ſtronger and ſome weaker *Stomachs*. But this I think, that many are made *Gormands* and *Gluttons* by *Cuſtom*, that were not ſo by *Nature:* And I ſee in ſome Countries Men as luſty and ſtrong that eat but two *Meals* a Day, as others that have ſet their *Stomachs* by a conſtant uſage, like *Larums*, to call on them for four or five.

The *Romans* uſually faſted 'till *Supper*, the only ſet *Meal*, even of thoſe who eat more than once a Day; and thoſe who us'd *Breakfaſts*, as ſome did at *Eight*, ſome at *Ten*, others at *Twelve* of the Clock, neither eat *Fleſh*, nor had any thing made ready for them. *Auguſtus*, when the greateſt Monarch on the Earth, tells us, he took a bit of dry Bread in his *Chariot*. And *Seneca*, giving an Account how he manag'd himſelf, even when he was old, and his Age permitted Indulgence, ſays, that he us'd to eat a piece of *dry Bread* for his *Dinner*, without the Formality of ſitting to it, tho' his Eſtate would have as well paid for a better *Meal*, had Health requir'd it, as any Subject's in *England*, were it doubled. The Maſters of the World were bred up with this ſpare *Diet*; and the *young Gentlemen* of *Rome* felt no want of *Strength* or Spirit, becauſe they *eat but once* a Day. Or if it happen'd by Chance that any one could not faſt ſo long as 'till Supper, their only ſet Meal, he took nothing but a bit of dry *Bread*, or at moſt a few *Raiſins*, or ſome ſuch ſlight thing with it. This part of Temperance was found ſo neceſſary, both for Health and Buſineſs, that the Cuſtom of only one *Meal* a Day held out againſt that prevailing Luxury which their *Eaſtern* Conqueſts and Spoils had brought in among them; and thoſe who had given up their old frugal *eating*, and made *Feaſts*, yet began them not 'till the Evening. More than *one ſet Meal* a Day was thought ſo monſtrous, that it was a Reproach, as low down as *Cæſar*'s time, to make an

Enter-

Entertainment, or ſit down to a Table, 'till towards Sun-ſet; and therefore, if it would not be thought too ſevere, I ſhould judge it moſt convenient, that my *young Maſter* ſhould have nothing but *Bread* too for *Breakfaſt*. You cannot imagine of what Force Cuſtom is, and I impute a great part of our Diſeaſes in *England* to our eating too much *Fleſh*, and too little *Bread*.

As to his *Meals*, I ſhould think it beſt, that, as much as it can be conveniently avoided, they ſhould not be kept conſtantly to an Hour; for when Cuſtom has fix'd his *eating* to certain ſtated *Periods*, his *Stomach* will expect *Victuals* at the uſual Hour, and grow peeviſh if he paſſes it; either fretting itſelf into a troubleſom Exceſs, or flagging into a downright want of Appetite; wherefore I would have no time kept conſtantly for his *Breakfaſt*, *Dinner*, and *Supper*, but rather vary'd almoſt every Day. And if between theſe which I call *Meals*, he will *eat*, let him have, as often as he calls for it, good dry *Bread*: If any one think this too hard and ſparing a Diet for a *Child*, let them know, that a *Child* will never ſtarve nor dwindle for want of Nouriſhment, who beſides *Fleſh* at Dinner, hath *Spoon meat* or ſome ſuch other thing at Supper, and may have good *Bread* and *Beer* as often as he has a Stomach. The Morning is generally deſign'd for Study, to which a full Stomach is but an ill Preparation: *Dry Bread*, tho' the beſt Nouriſhment, has the leaſt Temptation; and no Body would have a *Child* cram'd at *Breakfaſt*, who has any regard to his Mind or Body, and would not have him dull and unhealthy. Nor let any one think this unſuitable to one of Eſtate and Condition; a Gentleman in any Age ought to be ſo bred, as to be fitted to bear Arms and be a Soldier; but he that breeds his Son ſo as if he deſign'd him to ſleep over his Life in the Plenty and Eaſe of a full Fortune he intends to leave him, little conſiders the Examples he has ſeen, or the Age he lives in.

His *Drink* ſhould be only *Small Beer*, and that too he ſhould never be ſuffer'd to have between *Meals*; but after

ter he had eat a piece of *Bread.* More *Fevers* and *Surfeits* are got by Peoples *drinking* when they are *hot*, than by any one thing I know; for which Reaſon, if by Play he be hot and dry, Bread will ill go down, and ſo if he cannot have *Drink* but upon that Condition, he will be forc'd to forbear; for if he be very hot, he ſhould by no means drink; at leaſt a good piece of Bread firſt to be eaten, will gain time to warm the Beer *Blood-hot*, which then he may ſafely drink; if he be very dry, it will go down ſo warm'd, and quench his Thirſt better; and if he will not drink it ſo warm'd, abſtaining will not hurt him. Beſides, this will teach him to forbear, which is an Habit of greateſt Uſe for *Health* of Body and Mind too.

Not being permitted to *Drink* without eating, will prevent the Cuſtom of having the *Cup* often at his *Noſe*; a dangerous Beginning and Preparation to *good Fellowſhip*. Men often bring habitual *Hunger* and *Thirſt* on themſelves by *Cuſtom*; and if you pleaſe to try, you may, tho' he be wean'd from it, bring him by uſe to ſuch a Neceſſity again of *drinking* in the Night, that he will not be able to ſleep without it; it being the *Lullaby* us'd by *Nurſes* to ſtill crying *Children.* I believe *Mothers* generally find ſome difficulty to wean their *Children* from drinking in the Night, when they firſt take them Home. Believe it, Cuſtom prevails as much by *Day* as by *Night*; and you may if you pleaſe bring any one to be thirſty every Hour.

There was a *Child* in a certain Family, to which they gave Drink to appeaſe him as often as he was froward and cry'd; thus he was conſtantly bibbing; and tho' he could not ſpeak, yet he drank more in twenty four Hours than a moderate Man did. Try it when you pleaſe, you may with ſmall Beer as well as ſtrong Beer, *drink* yourſelf into a Drought. The great thing to be minded in *Education*, is, what *Habits* you ſettle; therefore in this as in all other things, do not begin to make any thing *Cuſtomary*, the Practice of which you would not have continue and increaſe. It is convenient for

Health

Health and Sobriety, to drink no more than natural Thirſt requires, and he that eats not ſalt Meats, nor drinks ſtrong Drink, will ſeldom thirſt between *Meals*, unleſs he has been accuſtom'd to ſuch unſeaſonable *drinking*.

Above all, take great care that he ſeldom, if ever, taſte any *Wine* or ſtrong *Drink*. There is nothing ſo ordinarily given *Children* in *England*, and nothing ſo deſtructive to them. They ought never to drink any *ſtrong* Liquor, but when they need it as a *Cordial*, and the Doctor preſcribes it: 'Tis in this Caſe particularly that *Servants* are to be moſt narrowly watch'd, and moſt ſeverely reprehended when they tranſgreſs. Theſe mean ſort of People placing a great part of their Happineſs in *ſtrong Drink*, are always forward to make Court to my *young Maſter*, by offering him that which they love beſt themſelves; and finding themſelves made merry by it, they fooliſhly think 'twill do the Child no harm. This you are carefully to have your Eye upon, and reſtrain with all the Skill and Induſtry you can; there being nothing that lays a ſurer Foundation of Miſchief both to *Body* and *Mind*, than Childrens being us'd to *ſtrong Drinks*, eſpecially to drink in private with the *Servants*.

Fruit makes one of the moſt difficult Chapters in the Government of *Health*, eſpecially that of *Children*. Our firſt *Parents* ventur'd *Paradiſe* for it, and 'tis no wonder our *Children* cannot ſtand the Temptation, tho' it coſt them their *Health*. The Regulation of this cannot come under any one general *Rule*; for I am by no means of their Mind, who would keep Children almoſt wholly from *Fruit*, as a thing totally unwholſom for them; by which ſtrict way they make them but the more ravenous after it, and to eat good or bad, ripe or unripe, all that they can get whenever they come at it. *Melons*, *Peaches*, moſt ſort of *Plumbs*, and all ſorts of *Grapes* in *England*, I think *Children* ſhould be wholly kept from, as having a very tempting Taſte in a very unwholſom Juice. Indeed, if it were poſſible, they ſhould never ſo much

much as ſee them, or know there are any ſuch things; but *Strawberries*, *Cherries*, *Gooſeberries*, or *Currants*, when thorough ripe, I think may be pretty ſafely allow'd them, and that with a liberal Hand, if they be not eaten after *Meals*, as we uſually do, when the Stomach is already full of other *Food*. They ſhould be eaten rather before *Meals*, and *Children* ſhould have them for their *Breakfaſts*. Let them alſo eat Bread with them, and take care they be perfectly ripe. Thus eaten, they are, I think, rather conducive than hurtful to *Health*: *Summer Fruits* being ſuited to the *Hot Seaſon* of the Year they come in, refreſh our Stomachs languiſhing and fainting under it; and therefore I ſhould not be altogether ſo ſtrict in this Point, as ſome are to their *Children*, who being kept ſo very ſhort, inſtead of a moderate quantity of well choſen *Fruit*, which being allow'd them wou'd content them, whenever they can get looſe, or bribe a *Servant* to ſupply them, ſatisfy their Longing with any *Traſh* they can get, and eat to a Surfeit.

Apples and *Pears* too which are thorough ripe, and have been gather'd ſome time, may, in my Judgment, be ſafely eaten at any time, and in pretty large Quantities, eſpecially *Apples*, which never did any Body Hurt, that I have heard, after *October*.

Fruits alſo dry'd with *Sugar*, I think very wholſom; but *Sweetmeats* of all kinds are to be avoided, which, whether they do more harm to the *Maker* or *Eater*, is not eaſy to tell: This I am ſure, it is one of the moſt inconvenient ways of Expence that *Vanity* has yet found out, and ſo I leave them to the *Ladies*.

Of all that looks Soft and Effeminate, nothing is more to be indulged in *Children* than *Sleep*: In this alone they are to be permitted to have their full Satisfaction; nothing contributing more to the Growth and Health of *Children* than *Sleep*. All that is to be regulated in it is, in what part of the twenty four Hours they ſhould take it; which will eaſily be reſolved by only ſaying, that it is of great uſe to accuſtom them to riſe early in the Morning. It is

beſt

beſt ſo to do for Health, and he that from his *Childhood* has by a ſettled Cuſtom made riſing betimes eaſy and familiar to him, will not, when he is a Man, waſte the beſt and moſt uſeful part of his Life in drowſineſs and lying *a-bed*. If Children therefore are to be call'd up early in a Morning, it will follow of Courſe that they muſt go to *Bed* betimes; by which they will be accuſtom'd to avoid the unhealthy and unſafe Hours of *Debauchery*, which are thoſe of the *Evenings*; and they who keep good Hours, ſeldom are guilty of any great Diſorders. I do not ſay this, as if your Son, when grown up, ſhould never be in Company paſt *Eight*, nor ever chat over a Glaſs of Wine 'till *Midnight*. You are now, by the accuſtoming of his tender Years, to indiſpoſe him to thoſe Inconveniences as much as you can; and it will be no ſmall Advantage, that, the contrary Practice having made ſitting up uneaſy to him, it will make him avoid, and very ſeldom propoſe *Midnight* Revels. However, if it ſhould not reach ſo far, but Faſhion and Company ſhould prevail, and make him live as others do about *Twenty*, 'tis worth the while to accuſtom him to early riſing, and early going to *Bed*, between this and that, for the preſent Improvement of his *Health* and other Advantages.

Tho' I have ſaid, a large Allowance of *Sleep*, even as much as they will take, ſhould be made to *Children* when they are little; yet I do not mean that it ſhould always be continu'd to them in ſo large a Proportion, and they ſuffer'd to indulge a drowſy Lazineſs in their *Beds*, as they grow up bigger. But whether they ſhould begin to be reſtrain'd at ſeven or ten Years old, or any other time, is impoſſible to be preciſely determined: Their Temper, Strength, and Conſtitution muſt be conſider'd. But ſome time between Seven and Fourteen, if they are too great *Lovers* of their *Beds*, I think it may be ſeaſonable to begin to reduce them by degrees to about eight Hours, which is generally *Reſt* enough for healthy grown People. If you have accuſtom'd him, as you ſhou'd do,

to

to riſe conſtantly very early in the Morning, this fault of being too long in Bed will eaſily be reform'd, and moſt Children will be forward enough to ſhorten that time themſelves, by coveting to ſit up with the Company at Night, tho', if they be not look'd after, they will be apt to take it out in the Morning, which ſhould by no means be permitted. They ſhould conſtantly be call'd up, and made to riſe at their early Hour; but great care ſhould be taken in waking them, that it be not done haſtily, nor with a loud or ſhrill Voice, or any other ſudden violent Noiſe; this often frights *Children*, and does them great harm; and ſound *Sleep* thus broke off with ſudden Alarms, is apt enough to diſcompoſe any one. When *Children* are to be waken'd out of their *Sleep* be ſure to begin with a low *Call*, and ſome gentle Motion, and ſo draw them out of it by Degrees, and give them none but kind Words, and Uſage, till they are come perfectly to themſelves, and being quite dreſt, you are ſure they are thoroughly awake. The being forc'd from their *Sleep*, how gently ſoever you do it, is Pain enough to them, and care ſhould be taken not to add any other Uneaſineſs to it, eſpecially ſuch as may terrify them.

Let his *Bed* be hard, and rather *Quilts* than *Feathers*; hard Lodging ſtrengthens the Parts, whereas being bury'd every Night in *Feathers*, melts and diſſolves the Body, is often the Cauſe of Weakneſs, and the Forerunner of an early *Grave*. Beſide that the *Stone* has frequently its riſe from this warm wrapping of the *Reins*, ſeveral other indiſpoſitions, and that which is the Root of them all, a tender weakly Conſtitution, is very much owing to *Down-Beds*. Further, he who is us'd to hard lodging at Home, will not miſs his *Sleep*, where he has moſt need of it, in his *Travels* abroad, for want of his ſoft *Bed*, and his Pillows laid in Order; wherefore, I think, it wou'd not be amiſs to make his Bed after different Faſhions; ſometimes lay his Head higher, ſometimes lower, that he may not feel every little Change he

muſt

muſt be ſure to meet with, who is not deſign'd to lie always in my *young Maſter*'s Bed at Home, and to have his Maid lay all things in Print, and tuck him in warm. The great *Cordial* of Nature is *Sleep*; he who miſſes that will ſuffer by it, and he is very unfortunate who can take his *Cordial* only in his *Mother*'s fine gilt Cup, and not in a wooden Diſh; he that can ſleep ſoundly takes the *Cordial*, and it matters not whether it be on a *ſoft Bed*, or the hard Boards. 'Tis Sleep only which is the thing Neceſſary.

There is one thing more that has a great Influence upon *Health*, and that is going to Stool regularly: People that are very looſe, have ſeldom ſtrong Thoughts or ſtrong Bodies; but the Cure of this both by Diet and Medicine, being much more eaſy than the contrary *Evil*, there needs not much to be ſaid about it; for if it come to threaten either by its Violence or Duration, it will ſoon enough, and ſometimes too ſoon, make a Phyſician be ſent for; and if it be moderate or ſhort, it is commonly beſt to leave it to *Nature*. On the other ſide *Coſtiveneſs* has too its ill Effect, and is much harder to be dealt with by *Phyſick*; purging Medicines, which ſeem to give Relief, rather increaſing than removing the Evil.

Upon this Head, ſo very neceſſary to the *Health* and Eaſe of Life, I met with the following Reflection in a very Eminent Author: "It being an Indiſpoſition, *ſays* "*he*, I had a particular Reaſon to inquire into, and "not finding the Cure of it in Books, I ſet my Thoughts "on Work, believing that greater *Changes* than that, "may be made in our Bodies, if we took the right "Courſe, and proceeded by rational Steps.

"Then I conſider'd, that going to *Stool* was the "Effect of certain Motions of the Body, eſpecially of "the periſtaltick Motion of the Guts.

"I conſider'd, that ſeveral Motions which were not "perfectly Voluntary, might yet by Uſe and conſtant "Application be brought to be habitual, if, by an un-

"intermitted

" intermitted Cuſtom, they were at certain Seaſons en-
" deavour'd to be conſtantly produced.

" I had obſerv'd ſome Men, who by taking after
" Supper a *Pipe* of *Tobacco*, never fail'd of a *Stool*; and
" began to doubt with myſelf, whether it were not
" more *Cuſtom*, than the *Tobacco*, that gave them the
" Benefit of *Nature*; or at leaſt if the *Tobacco* did it,
" 'twas rather by exciting a vigorous Motion in the
" *Guts*, than by any purging Quality.

" Having thus once got the Opinion, that it was
" poſſible to make it habitual, the next thing was to
" conſider what Way and Means was the likelieſt to
" obtain it.

" Then I gueſs'd, that if a Man after his firſt eating
" in a Morning would preſently ſolicit *Nature*, and try
" whether he could ſtrain himſelf ſo as to obtain a *Stool*,
" he might in time by a conſtant Application bring it
" to be habitual.

" I never knew any one who had been ſteady in the
" Proſecution of this Experiment, but in few Months he
" has obtain'd the deſir'd Succeſs; I would therefore
" adviſe, that this Courſe ſhould be taken with the *Child*
" every Day, preſently after he has eaten his Breakfaſt;
" how far any grown People will think fit to make Trial
" of it, muſt be left to them; tho' I cannot but ſay, that
" conſidering the Evils, that come from the Defect of a
" requiſite eaſing of Nature, I ſcarce know any thing
" more conducing to the Preſervation of *Health* than
" this is. Once in Four and Twenty Hours I think is
" enough, and no Body, I gueſs, will think it too
" much. By this Means it is to be obtain'd without
" *Phyſick*, the next thing to be treated of."

Perhaps it will be expected that Directions ſhould be given, of *Phyſick* to prevent Diſeaſes: For which I have only this one, very ſacredly to be obſerved, never to give *Children* any *Phyſick* for *Prevention*. The Obſervation of what has been already adviſ'd, will do that better than the *Ladies* Diet-Drinks, or Apothecaries Medicines. Have

a great Care of tampering that way, leſt inſtead of preventing, you draw on *Diſeaſes*; nor even upon every little Indiſpoſition is *Phyſick* to be given, or the *Phyſician* to be call'd to *Children*, eſpecially if he be a buſy Man, that will preſently fill the Windows with *Gallipots*, and their Stomachs with *Drugs*. It is ſafer to leave them wholly to Nature, than to put them into the Hands of one forward to tamper, or that thinks *Children* are to be cured in ordinary Diſtempers, by any thing but *Diet*, or by a Method very little diſtant from it: It ſeeming ſuitable both to my own Reaſon, and to the Experience of others, that the tender Conſtitutions of *Children* ſhould have as little done to them as is poſſible, and as the abſolute Neceſſity of the Caſe requires. A little cold-ſtill'd *Red-poppy Water*, which is the true *Surfeit Water*, with Eaſe and Abſtinence, often puts an end to ſeveral *Diſtempers* in the beginning, which by too forward Applications might have been made luſty Diſeaſes. When ſuch a gentle Treatment will not ſtop the growing Miſchief, nor hinder it from turning to a form'd *Diſeaſe*, it will be Time to ſeek the Advice of ſome ſober and diſcreet Phyſician. In this part, I hope, I ſhall find an eaſy Belief, that the more conſiderate People are in the Uſe of Phyſick and Phyſicians, the better it will be for their own Health, and the Health of their *Children*.

Thus I have done with what concerns the Body and Health of Children, which reduces itſelf to theſe few and eaſy obſervable Rules; Plenty of *open Air*, *Exerciſe* and *Sleep*, plain *Diet*, no *Wine* or *ſtrong Drink*, and very little or no *Phyſick*, nor too *Warm* and *Strait* Clothing, eſpecially the *Head* and *Feet* kept *Cold*, and the *Feet* often us'd to *Cold* Water, and expos'd to *Wet*.

Due Care being had to keep the *Body* in Strength and Vigour, ſo that it may be able to obey and execute the Orders of the *Mind*, the next and principal Buſineſs is to ſet the *Mind right*, that on all Occaſions it may be diſpos'd to conſent to nothing but what may be ſuitable to the Dignity and Excellency of a rational Creature.

Much

Much has been ſaid on this Subject in the preceding Pages, but ſomething more ſtill remains worth our Conſideration.

As the Strength of the Body lies chiefly in being able to endure *Hardſhips*, ſo alſo does that of the Mind; and the great Principle and Foundation of all Virtue and Worth is plac'd in this, that a Man is able to deny himſelf his own Deſires, croſs his own Inclinations, and purely follow what Reaſon directs as beſt, though the Appetite lean the other way.

The great Miſtake in Peoples breeding their *Children*, has been, that this has not been taken care enough of in *due Seaſon*, that the *Mind* has not been made obedient to Diſcipline and pliant to Reaſon, when at firſt it was moſt tender, moſt to be bowed. Parents being wiſely ordain'd by Nature to love their Children, are very apt, if Reaſon watch not that natural Affection very warily, to let it run into *Fondneſs*. They love their little ones, and 'tis their Duty, but they often with them cheriſh their Faults too. They muſt not be croſt forſooth, they muſt be permitted to have their Wills in all things, and they being in their *Infancies* not capable of great Vices, their Parents think they may ſafely enough indulge their little Irregularities, and make themſelves Sport with their pretty Perverſeneſs, which they think well enough becomes that innocent Age: but to a fond *Parent* that would not have his *Child* corrected for a perverſe Trick, but excus'd it, ſaying, 'twas a ſmall Matter, *Solon* very well reply'd, *Ay, but Cuſtom is a great one.*

The *Fondling* muſt be taught to ſtrike and call *Names*, muſt have what he calls for, and do what he pleaſes. Thus *Parents* by humouring them, and cockering them when *Little*, corrupt the Principles of Nature in their *Children*, and wonder afterwards to taſte the bitter Waters, when they themſelves have poiſon'd the Fountain; for when their *Children* are grown up, and theſe ill *Habits* with them, when they are now too big to be dandled,

dled, and their Parents can no longer make uſe of them as *Play-things*, they then complain that the *Brats* are untoward and perverſe, they are then offended to ſee them wilful, and are troubled with thoſe ill Humours which they themſelves infus'd and fomented in them; and then, perhaps too late, would be glad to get out thoſe *Weeds*, which their own Hands have planted, and which now have taken too deep Root to be eaſily extirpated. For he that has been us'd to have his Will in every thing, as long as he was in *Coats*, why ſhould we think it ſtrange that he ſhould deſire it, and contend for it ſtill, when he is in *Breeches?* Indeed, as he grows more towards Man, Age ſhews his Faults the more, and there are few *Parents* then ſo blind as not to ſee them, few ſo inſenſible as not to feel the ill Effects of their own Indulgence. He had the *Will* of his *Maid* before he could ſpeak or go, he had the *Maſtery* of his *Parents* ever ſince he could *prattle*, and why now he is grown up, is ſtronger and wiſer than he was then, why now of a ſudden muſt he be reſtrain'd and curb'd? Why muſt he, at Seven, Fourteen, or Twenty Years old, loſe the Privilege which the Parents Indulgence till then ſo largely allow'd him? Try it in a Dog or an Horſe, or any other Creature, and ſee whether the ill and reſty Tricks they have learn'd when young, are eaſily to be mended when they are knit; and yet none of thoſe Creatures are half ſo wilful and proud, or half ſo deſirous to be Maſters of themſelves and others, as *Man*.

We are generally wiſe enough to begin with Them when they are very Young, and diſcipline *betimes* thoſe other Creatures we would make uſeful and good for ſomewhat; they are only our own *Offspring* we neglect in this point, and having made them ill *Children*, we fooliſhly expect they ſhould be good *Men*. For if the *Child* muſt have *Grapes* or *Sugar-Plumbs* when he has a mind to them, rather than to make the poor *Baby* cry or be out of humour, why when he is grown up, muſt he not be ſatisfied too, if his Deſires carry him to *Wine*

or

or *Women?* They are Objects as ſuitable to the longing of one of more Years, as what he cry'd for when Little was to the Inclinations of a *Child.* The having Deſires accommodated to the Apprehenſions and Reliſh of thoſe ſeveral Ages, is not the *Fault*, but the not having them ſubject to the Rules and Reſtraints of Reaſon: The Difference lies not in having or not having *Appetites*, but in the Power to govern and deny ourſelves in them. He that is not us'd to ſubmit his Will to the Reaſon of others, when he is *Young*, will ſcarce hearken or ſubmit to his own Reaſon when he is of an Age to make uſe of it: And what a kind of Man ſuch a one is like to prove, is eaſy to foreſee. Theſe are Overſights uſually committed by thoſe who ſeem to take the greateſt Care of their Childrens *Education*; but if we look into the common Management of *Children*, we ſhall have reaſon to wonder, in the great Diſſoluteneſs of Manners which the World complains of, that there are any Footſteps at all left of Virtue. I deſire to know what Vice can be nam'd, which *Parents*, and thoſe about *Children*, do not ſeaſon them with, and drop into 'em the Seeds of, as ſoon as they are capable to receive them? I do not mean by the Examples they give, and the Patterns they ſet before them, which is Encouragement enough, but that which I would take notice of here, is the downright teaching them *Vice*, and actual putting them out of the way of *Virtue:* Before they can go, they principle 'em with *Violence*, *Revenge*, and *Cruelty*. *Give me a Blow that I may beat him*, is a Leſſon which moſt *Children* every Day hear, and it is thought nothing, becauſe their Hands have not Strength to do any Miſchief: But I ask, does not this corrupt the Mind? Is not this the way of Force and Violence, that they are ſet in? And if they have been taught when *Little* to ſtrike and hurt others by Proxy, and encouraged to rejoice in the Harm they have brought upon them, and ſee them ſuffer, are they not prepared to do it, when they are ſtrong enough

enough to be felt themſelves, and can ſtrike to ſome Purpoſe?

The *Coverings* of our *Bodies*, which are for *Modeſty*, *Warmth*, and *Defence*, are by the Folly or Vice of *Parents*, recommended to their *Children* for other Uſes; they are made Matters of *Vanity* and *Emulation*. A *Child* is ſet a longing for a new *Suit* for the Finery of it; and when the little *Girl* is trick'd up in her *New Gown* and *Cap*, how can her *Mother* do leſs than teach her to admire herſelf, by calling her, her *Little Queen*, and her *Princeſs?* Thus the *Little* Ones are taught to be proud of their *Clothes*, before they can put them on; and why ſhould they not continue to value themſelves for their Outſide, the Faſhionableneſs of the Tailor or Tirewoman's making, when their *Parents* have ſo early inſtructed them to do ſo?

Lying, and Equivocations, and Excuſes little different from *Lying*, are put into the Mouths of young People, and commended to *Apprentices* and *Children*, while they are for their *Maſters* or *Parents* Advantage; and can it be thought that he who finds the ſtraining of Truth diſpens'd with, and encourag'd while it is for his godly Maſter's Turn, will not make uſe of the Privilege for himſelf, when it may be for his own Profit?

Thoſe of the meaner ſort are hinder'd, by the ſtraitneſs of their Fortunes, from encouraging *Intemperance* in their *Children*, by the Temptation of their Diet, or Invitations to eat or drink more than enough; but their own ill Examples, whenever *Plenty* comes in their way, ſhew that 'tis not the Diſlike of *Drunkenneſs* or *Gluttony*, that keeps them from Exceſs, but want of Materials. If we look into the Houſes of thoſe who are a little warmer in their Fortunes, there eating and drinking are made ſo much the great Buſineſs and Happineſs of Life, that *Children* are thought neglected if they have not their Share of it. Sauces, Ragoos, and Food diſguis'd by all the Arts of *Cookery*, muſt tempt their Palates when their Bellies are full; and then for fear their Stomach

ſhould

ſhould be overcharg'd, a Pretence is form'd for another Glaſs of Wine to help Digeſtion, though it only ſerves to increaſe the *Surfeit*.

Is my *young Maſter* a little out of order, the firſt Queſtion is, *What will my Dear eat? What ſhall I get for thee?* Eating and drinking are inſtantly preſs'd, and every Body's Invention is ſet to work to find out ſomething luſcious and delicate enough to prevail over that Want of Appetite, which *Nature* has wiſely order'd in the beginning of Diſtempers, as a Defence againſt their Increaſe; that being freed from the ordinary Labour of digeſting any new Load in the Stomach, ſhe may be at leiſure to correct and maſter the peccant Humours.

Where *Children* are ſo happy in the Care of their *Parents*, as by their Prudence to be kept from the Exceſs of their *Table*, to the Sobriety of a plain ſimple *Diet*; yet even there they are rarely preſerv'd from the Contagion that poiſons the *Mind*. Tho' by a diſcreet Management, while they are under Tuition, their *Health* perhaps may be pretty well ſecur'd, yet their Deſires muſt needs yield to the Leſſon which every where will be read to them upon this part of *Epicuriſm*. The Commendation the Eating well has every where, cannot fail to be a ſucceſsful Incentive to natural Appetite, and bring them quickly to the liking and expence of a faſhionable Table. This ſhall have from every one, even the Reprovers of *Vice*, the Title of *Living well*; and what ſhall ſullen Virtue dare to ſay againſt the publick Teſtimony? Or can it hope to be heard, if it ſhould call that *Luxury* which is ſo much owned, and univerſally practis'd by thoſe of the beſt Quality?

This is now ſo grown a *Vice*, and has ſo great Supports, that I know not whether it does not put in for the Name of *Virtue*, and whether it will not be thought *Folly*, or want of Knowledge of the World, to open ones Mouth againſt it. I ſhould truly ſuſpect that what I have here ſaid of it, might be cenſur'd as a little Satire out of my way, did I not mention it with this View,

that it might awaken the Care and Watchfulneſs of *Parents* in the *Education* of their *Children*, when they ſee how they are beſet on every ſide, not only with Temptations but Inſtructors to Vice, and that perhaps in thoſe they thought Places of Security.

I ſhall not dwell any longer on this Subject, much leſs run over all the Particulars that would ſhew what Pains are us'd to corrupt *Children*, and inſtil Principles of Vice into them; but I deſire *Parents* ſoberly to conſider what Irregularity or Vice there is, which *Children* are not viſibly taught, and whether it be not their Duty and Wiſdom to provide them other Inſtruction.

It ſeems plain to me, that the Principle of all Virtue and Excellency, lies in a Power of denying ourſelves the Satisfaction of our own Deſires, where Reaſon does not authoriſe them. This Power is to be got and improv'd by Cuſtom, made eaſy and familiar by an *Early* Practice: If therefore I might be heard, I would adviſe that, contrary to the ordinary way, *Children* ſhould be us'd to ſubmit their Deſires, and go without their Longings, even from their very *Cradles*. The firſt thing they ſhould learn to know, ſhould be that they were not to have any thing becauſe it pleaſed them, but becauſe it was thought fit for them. If things ſuitable to their Wants were ſupply'd to them, ſo that they were never ſuffer'd to have what they once cry'd for, they would learn to be content without it, would never with Bawling and Peeviſhneſs contend for Maſtery, nor be half ſo uneaſy to themſelves and others, as they are, becauſe from the firſt beginning they are not thus handled. If they were not ſuffer'd to obtain their Deſire by the Impatience they expreſs'd for it, they would no more cry for any other thing than they do for the Moon.

I ſay not this, as if *Children* were not to be ſometimes indulg'd, or that I expected they ſhould in hanging Sleeves have the Reaſon and Conduct of Counſellors. I conſider them as *Children* who muſt be tenderly us'd, who muſt play and have Play-things; that which I

mean

mean is, that whenever they crav'd what was not fit for them to have or do, they ſhould not be permitted it becauſe they were *Little*, and deſir'd it; nay whatever they were importunate for, they ſhould be ſure for that very reaſon to be deny'd. I have ſeen *Children* at a Table, who, whatever was there, never ask'd for any thing, but contentedly took what was given them; and at another Place, I have ſeen others cry for every thing they ſaw, muſt be ſerved out of every Diſh, and that firſt too; what made this vaſt Difference, but this, That one was accuſtom'd to have what they call'd or cry'd for, the other to go without it. The younger they are, the leſs I think are their unruly and diſorderly Appetites to be comply'd with; and the leſs Reaſon they have of their own, the more are they to be under the abſolute Power and Reſtraint of thoſe in whoſe Hands they are. From which I confeſs it will follow, that none but diſcreet People ſhould be about them; if the World commonly does otherwiſe, I cannot help that: I am ſaying what I think ſhould be, which if it were already in faſhion, I ſhould not need to trouble the World with a Diſcourſe on this Subject; however, I doubt not, when it is conſider'd, there will be others of Opinion with me, that the ſooner the Way is begun with *Children*, the eaſier it will be for them and their Governors too; and that this ought to be obſerv'd as an inviolable Maxim, that whatever once is deny'd them, they are certainly not to obtain by Crying and Importunity, unleſs one has a mind to teach them to be impatient and troubleſom, by rewarding them for it when they are ſo.

Thoſe therefore that intend ever to govern their *Children* well, ſhould begin it while they are very *Little*, and look that they perfectly comply with the Will of their *Parents*. Would you have your *Son* obedient to you when paſt a *Child?* Be ſure then to eſtabliſh the Authority of a *Father*, as ſoon as he is capable of Submiſſion, and can underſtand in whoſe Power he is; if you would

have him ſtand in awe of you, imprint it in his Infancy, and as he approaches more to a Man, admit him nearer to your Familiarity; ſo ſhall you have him your obedient *Subject* as is fit, while he is a *Child*, and your Affectionate Friend while he is a Man. For methinks they mightily miſplace the Treatment due to their *Children*, who are Indulgent and Familiar when they are *Little*, but ſevere to them, and keep them at a diſtance when they are grown up; for Liberty and Indulgence can do no good to *Children*, the want of Judgment makes them ſtand in need of Reſtraint and Diſcipline; and on the contrary, Imperiouſneſs and Severity is but an ill way of treating Men, who have Reaſon of their own to guide them; unleſs you have a mind to make your Children, when they are grown up, weary of you, and ſecretly to ſay within themſelves, *When will you die, Father?*

I imagine every one will judge it reaſonable, that their *Children* when *Little*, ſhould look upon their Parents as Lords, their abſolute Governors, and as ſuch ſtand in awe of them; and that when they come to riper Years, they ſhould look on them as their beſt, as their only ſure Friends, and as ſuch love and reverence them; the way I have mention'd, if I miſtake not, is the only one to obtain this; we muſt look upon our *Children*, when *grown up*, to be like ourſelves, with the ſame Paſſions, the ſame Deſires. We wou'd be thought rational Creatures, and have our Freedom; we love not to be uneaſy under conſtant Rebukes and Brow-beatings, nor can we bear ſevere Humours and great Diſtance in thoſe we converſe with; whoever has ſuch Treatment when he is a Man, will look out other Company, other Friends, other Converſation, with whom he can be at eaſe. If therefore a *ſtrict* Hand be kept over *Children* from the *Beginning*, they will in that Age be tractable, and quietly ſubmit to it, as never having known any other; and if as they grow up to the uſe of Reaſon, the Rigour of Government be, as they deſerve,

gently

gently relax'd, the Father's Brow more ſmooth to them, and the diſtance by degrees abated; his former Reſtraints will increaſe their Love when they find it was only a Kindneſs to them, and a Care to make them capable to deſerve the Favour of their Parents, and the Eſteem of every Body elſe.

Thus much for the ſettling your Authority over your *Children* in general; Fear and Awe ought to give you the firſt Power over their Minds, and Love and Friendſhip in riper Years to hold it. For the Time muſt come when they will be paſt the *Rod* and Correction; and then if the Love of you make them not obedient and dutiful, if the Love of Virtue and Reputation keep them not in laudable Courſes, I ask what Hold will you have upon them, to turn them to it? Indeed Fear of having a ſcanty Portion, if they diſpleaſe you, may make them Slaves to your Eſtate, but they will be nevertheleſs ill and wicked in private, and that Reſtraint will not laſt always; every Man muſt one time or other be truſted to himſelf and his own Conduct, and he that is a good, a virtuous, and able Man, muſt be made ſo within; wherefore what he is to receive from *Education*, what is to ſway and influence his Life, muſt be ſomething put into him *betimes*; Habits woven into the very Principles of his Nature, and not a counterfeit Carriage, and diſſembled Outſide put on by *Fear*, only to avoid the preſent Anger of a *Father*, who perhaps may diſinherit him.

Theſe Reflexions will hold good with reſpect to thoſe Mothers, who have the charge of their Son's Education, as Widows, and the Wives of weak Fathers, and others under the Neceſſity of taking care of them on their accounts. But this Diſcourſe tending chiefly to the breeding of a Son, the *Father* will here have the chief Part of the Direction that is given, which cannot but be alſo of uſe to the *Mother*.

We ſhall now conſider the Parts of the *Diſcipline* to be us'd a little more particularly. So much has been ſaid

of carrying a ſtrict hand over *Children*, that perhaps I ſhall be ſuſpected of not conſidering enough what is due to their tender Age and Conſtitutions; nevertheleſs I own it is my Opinion, that great Severity of Puniſhment does but very little good; on the contrary, it does great Hurt in *Education*. I believe it will be found, that take *Children* one with another, thoſe who have been moſt *Chaſtis'd* ſeldom make the beſt Men. All that I contend for is, that whatſoever *Rigour* is neceſſary, it is more to be us'd the younger Children are, and having by a due Application wrought its Effect, it is to be relax'd and chang'd into a milder ſort of Government.

A Compliance and Suppleneſs of their Wills, being by a ſteady hand introduced by *Parents*, before *Children* have Memories to retain the beginning of it, will ſeem natural to them, and work afterwards in them, as if it were ſo, preventing all Occaſions of ſtruggling and repining; the only Care is that it be begun early, and inflexibly kept to, 'till *Awe* and *Reſpect* be grown familiar, and there appears not the leaſt Reluctance in the Submiſſion, and ready Obedience of their *Minds*; when this Reverence is once thus eſtabliſh'd, (which it muſt be early, or elſe it will coſt Pains and Blows to recover it, and the more the longer it is deferr'd,) 'tis by this, mixt ſtill with as much Indulgence as they make not an ill Uſe of, and not by *beating*, *chiding*, or other *Servile* Puniſhments, they are to be govern'd for the future, as they grow up to more Underſtanding. That this is ſo will be eaſily allow'd, when it is but conſider'd what is to be aim'd at in an ingenuous *Education*, and upon what it turns.

He that has not a Maſtery over his Inclinations, he that knows not how to reſiſt the *Importunity* of preſent *Pleaſure* and *Pain*, for the ſake of what Reaſon tells him is fit to be done, wants the true Principle of Induſtry, and is in Danger never to be good for any thing. This Temper therefore, ſo contrary to unguided Nature, is to be got betimes; and this *Habit*, as the true Founda-

tion

tion of future Ability and Happineſs, is to be wrought into the Mind as early as may be, even from the firſt Dawnings of any Knowledge or Apprehenſion in Children, and ſo to be confirm'd in them by all the Care and Ways imaginable, by thoſe who have the Overſight of their *Education*. On the other ſide, if the *Mind* be curb'd and humbled too much in *Children*, if their *Spirits* be abas'd and broken much, by too ſtrict an Hand over them, they loſe all their Vigour and Induſtry, and are in a worſe State than the former; for extravagant young Fellows, that have Livelineſs and Spirit, come ſometimes to be ſet right, and ſo make able and great Men; but dejected Minds, Timorous and Tame, and *Cow Spirits*, are hardly ever to be raiſed, and very ſeldom attain to any Thing. To avoid the Danger that is on either Hand is the great Art, and he that has found a way how to keep up a *Child*'s Spirit eaſy, active, and free, and yet at the ſame time to reſtrain him from many Things he has a mind to, and to draw him to things that are uneaſy to him, he, I ſay, that knows how to reconcile theſe ſeeming Contradictions, has in my Opinion got the true ſecret of *Education*.

The uſual lazy and ſhort way by *Chaſtiſement* and the *Rod*, which is the only Inſtrument of Government that Tutors generally know or ever think of, is the moſt unfit of any to be us'd in *Education*; becauſe it tends to both thoſe Miſchiefs, which, as we have ſhewn, are the two Rocks, that on the one Hand or the other ruin all who miſcarry.

This kind of Puniſhment does not at all contribute to the Maſtery of our natural Propenſity to indulge corporal and preſent Pleaſure, and to avoid Pain at any Rate, but rather encourages it, and thereby ſtrengthens that in us, which is the Root from whence ſpring all vicious Actions, and the Irregularities of Life. For what other Motive, but ſenſual Pleaſure and Pain, does a *Child* act by, who drudges at his Book againſt his Inclination, or abſtains from eating unwholſom Fruit, that

he takes Pleaſure in, only out of fear of whipping? he in this only prefers the greater *Corporal Pleaſure*, or avoids the greater *Corporal Pain*; and what is it to govern his *Actions*, and yet direct his Conduct by ſuch Motives as theſe? What is it, I ſay, but to cheriſh that Principle in him, which it is our Buſineſs to root out and deſtroy: And therefore I cannot think any Correction uſeful to a *Child*, where the Shame of ſuffering for having done amiſs, does not work more upon him than the Pain.

This ſort of *Correction* naturally breeds an Averſion to that, which 'tis the *Tutor*'s Buſineſs to create a liking to. How obvious is it to obſerve, that *Children* come to hate things which were at firſt acceptable to them, when they find themſelves *whip'd* and *chid*, and *teas'd* about them? And it is not to be wonder'd at in them, when grown Men would not be able to be reconciled to any thing by ſuch Ways. Who is there that would not be diſguſted with any innocent *Recreation*, in itſelf indifferent to him, if he ſhould with *Blows* or ill Language be hal'd to it, when he had no mind? or be conſtantly ſo treated for ſome Circumſtances in his Application to it? This is natural to be ſo. Offenſive Circumſtances ordinarily infect innocent things, which they are join'd with, and the very ſight of a *Cup*, wherein any one uſes to take nauſeous *Phyſick*, ſo turns his Stomach, that nothing will reliſh out of it, tho' the Cup be never ſo clean and well-ſhap'd and of the richeſt Materials.

Such a ſort of *ſlaviſh Diſcipline* makes a *ſlaviſh Temper*, the *Child* ſubmits and diſſembles Obedience, while the Fear of the *Rod* hangs over him, but when that is removed, and by being out of ſight he can promiſe himſelf Impunity, he gives the greater Scope to his natural Inclination; which by this way is not at all alter'd; but on the contrary, heighten'd and increas'd in him, and, after ſuch *Reſtraint*, breaks out uſually with more Violence.

If *Severity* carry'd to the higheſt Pitch does prevail, and works a Cure upon the preſent unruly Diſtemper, it is often by bringing in the room of it a worſe and more dangerous Diſeaſe, by breaking the Mind, and then in the place of a diſorderly *Young Fellow*, you have a *low-ſpirited* mop'd Creature; who, however with his unnatural Sobriety, he may pleaſe ſilly People, who commend tame unactive *Children*, becauſe they make no Noiſe, nor give them any Trouble, yet at laſt will probably prove as uncomfortable a thing to his Friends, as he will be all his Life an uſeleſs thing to himſelf and others.

Beating then, and all other ſorts of ſlaviſh *Puniſhments*, are not the Diſcipline to be us'd in the *Education* of thoſe we wou'd have wiſe, good, and ingenious Men, and therefore very rarely to be apply'd, and that only in great Occaſions and Caſes of Extremity. On the other ſide, to flatter *Children* by *Rewards* of things that are pleaſant to them, is as carefully to be avoided. He that will give his Son *Apples* or *Sugar-Plumbs*, or what elſe of this kind he is moſt delighted with, to make him learn his Book, does but authorize his Love of Pleaſure, and cocker up that dangerous Propenſity which he ought by all means to ſubdue and ſtifle in him. You can never hope to teach him to maſter it, while you compound for the check you give his Inclination in one place, by the Satisfaction you propoſe to it in another. To make a good, a wiſe, and virtuous Man, 'tis fit he ſhould learn to croſs his *Appetite*, and deny his Inclination to *Riches*, *Finery*, or *pleaſing his Palate*, &c. whenever his Reaſon adviſes the contrary, and his Duty requires it. But when you draw him to do any thing that is fit by the Offer of *Money*, or reward the Pains of learning his *Book* by the Pleaſure of a luſcious *Morſel*; when you promiſe him a *Lace Cravat*, or a fine *new Suit*, upon Performance of ſome of his little Tasks; what do you, by propoſing theſe as *Rewards*, but allow them to be the good things he ſhould aim it, and thereby encourage his longing for them, and accuſtom him to place his Happineſs in them?

Thus People, to prevail with *Children* to be induſtrious about their *Grammar*, *Dancing*, or ſome other ſuch Matter, of no great moment, to the Happineſs or Uſefulneſs of their Lives, by miſapply'd *Rewards* and *Puniſhments*, ſacrifice their Virtue, invert the Order of their *Education*, and teach them *Luxury*, *Pride*, or *Covetouſneſs*, &c. for in this way flattering thoſe wrong Inclinations they ſhould reſtrain and ſuppreſs, they lay the Foundation of theſe future *Vices*, which cannot be avoided but by curbing our Deſires, and accuſtoming them early to ſubmit to Reaſon.

I ſay not this, as if I would have *Children* kept from ſuch Conveniences or Pleaſures of Life, as are not injurious to their *Health* or *Virtue*. On the contrary, I would have their Lives made as pleaſant and as agreeable to them as may be, in a plentiful Enjoyment of whatſoever might innocently delight them, provided it be with this Caution, that they have thoſe Enjoyments only as the Conſequences of the State of Eſteem and Acceptation they are in with their *Parents* or *Governors*; but they ſhould never be offer'd or beſtow'd on them as the *Rewards* of *this* or *that* particular *Performance* that they ſhew an Averſion to, or to which they would not have apply'd themſelves without that Temptation.

But if you take away the *Rod* on one hand, and theſe little Encouragements which they are taken with, on the other; how then, will you ſay, ſhall *Children* be govern'd? Remove Hope and Fear, and there is an end of all *Diſcipline*. I grant that *Good* and *Evil*, *Reward* and *Puniſhment*, are the only Motives to a rational *Creature*: Theſe are the Spur and Reins by which all Mankind are ſet to work and guided, and therefore they are to be made uſe of to *Children* too: For I adviſe their *Parents* and *Governors* always to carry this in their Minds, that Children are to be treated as rational Creatures.

Rewards, I grant, and *Puniſhments*, muſt be propos'd to *Children*, if we intend to work upon them. The Miſtake, I imagine is, that thoſe which are generally made

made uſe of, are *ill-choſen*. The Pains and Pleaſures of the *Body*, are I think of ill Conſequence, when made the *Rewards* and *Puniſhments* by which Men would prevail on their *Children*; for, as I ſaid before, they ſerve but to increaſe and ſtrengthen thoſe Inclinations which 'tis our Buſineſs to ſubdue and maſter. What Principle of Virtue do you lay in a *Child*, if you will redeem his Deſires of *one* Pleaſure, by the Propoſal of *another?* This is but to enlarge his *Appetite*, and inſtruct it to wander. If a Child cries for an unwholſom and dangerous *Fruit*, you purchaſe his Quiet by giving him a leſs hurtful *Sweetmeat*; this perhaps may preſerve his *Health*, but ſpoils his *Mind*, and ſets that further out of Order. For here you only change the Object, but flatter ſtill his *Appetite*, and allow that muſt be ſatisfy'd, wherein I have ſhew'd lies the Root of the Miſchief; and 'till you bring him to be able to bear a denial of that Satisfaction, the *Child* may at preſent be quiet and orderly, but the Diſeaſe is not cured. By this way of proceeding, you foment and cheriſh in him that which is the Spring from whence all the *Evils* flow, which will be ſure on the next Occaſion to break out again with more Violence, give him ſtronger *Longings*, and you more Trouble.

The *Rewards* and *Puniſhments* then by which you ſhould keep Children in Order, are quite of another kind, and of that *Force*, that when we can get them once to work, the Buſineſs I think is done, and the Difficulty is over: *Eſteem* and *Diſgrace* are of all others the moſt powerful Incentives to the Mind, when once it is brought to reliſh them. If you can once get a Love of Credit into *Children*, and an Apprehenſion of *Shame* and *Diſgrace*, you have put into them the true Principle which will conſtantly work and incline them to the *Right*. But it will be ask'd how ſhall this be done?

I confeſs it does not at firſt appearance want ſome Difficulty, but yet I think it worth our while to ſeek the

the ways, and practiſe them when found, to attain this which I look on as the great Secret of *Education*.

Children, earlier perhaps than we think, are very ſenſible of *Praiſe* and Commendation; they find a Pleaſure in being Eſteem'd and Valu'd, eſpecially by their *Parents* and thoſe whom they depend on: If therefore the Father *careſs* and *commend* them when they do *well*, ſhew a *cold* and *neglectful Countenance* to them when they do *ill*, accompany'd by a like Carriage of the *Mother*, and all others that are about them, it will in a little time make them ſenſible of the Difference; and this if conſtantly obſerv'd, will, I doubt not, of itſelf, work more than *Threats* or *Blows*, which loſe their Force when once grown common, are of no uſe when *Shame* does not attend them, and therefore are to be forborn, and never to be us'd but in Caſes of Extremity.

To make the Senſe of *Eſteem* or *Diſgrace* ſink the deeper, and be of more weight, other agreeable or diſagreeable things ſhould conſtantly accompany theſe *different* States, not as particular *Rewards* and *Puniſhments* of this or that particular Action, but as neceſſarily belonging to, and conſtantly attending one, who by his Carriage has brought himſelf into a State of Diſgrace or Commendation; by which way of treating them, *Children* may as much as poſſible be brought to conceive, that thoſe that are commended, and in Eſteem for doing *well*, will neceſſarily be beloved and cheriſh'd by every Body, and have all other good Things as a Conſequent of it; and on the other ſide, when any one by Miſcarriage falls into *Diſeſteem*, and cares not to preſerve his *Credit*, he will unavoidably fall under *Neglect* and *Contempt*; and in that State, the Want of whatever might ſatisfy or delight him, will follow. In this way, the Objects of their *Deſires* are made aſſiſting to *Virtue*, when a ſettled Experience from the beginning teaches *Children*, that the Things they delight in belong to and are to be enjoy'd by thoſe only, who are in a State of *Reputation*. If by theſe means you can come once to *ſhame* them

cur

out of their *Faults*, (for otherwiſe I would willingly have no *Puniſhments*) and make them in love with the Pleaſure of being well thought of, you may turn them as you pleaſe, and they will be in love with all the ways of Virtue.

The great Difficulty here I take to be occaſion'd by the Folly and Perverſeneſs of *Servants*, who are hardly to be hinder'd from croſſing herein the Deſign of the *Father* and *Mother*. *Children* diſcountenanc'd by their *Parents* for any Fault, find uſually a Refuge and Relief in the Careſſes of theſe fooliſh *Flatterers*, who by that undo whatever the *Parents* endeavour to eſtabliſh. When the *Father* or *Mother* looks ſour on the *Child*, every body elſe ſhould put on the ſame *Coldneſs* to him, and no body give him Countenance, 'till Forgiveneſs ask'd and a Reformation of his Fault, have ſet him right again, and reſtor'd him to his former Credit. If this were conſtantly obſerv'd, I gueſs there would be little need of *Blows* or *Chiding*; their own Eaſe and Satisfaction would quickly teach *Children* to court *Commendation*, and avoid that which they found every body Condemn'd, and they were ſure to ſuffer for, without being chid or beaten. This would teach them *Modeſty* and *Shame*, and they would quickly come to have a natural Abhorrence for that which they found made them ſlighted and neglected by every body. But how this Inconvenience from *Servants* is to be remedy'd, I muſt leave to *Parents* Care and Conſideration. Only I think it of great Importance, and that they are very happy who can get diſcreet People about their *Children*.

Avoid then frequent *beating* or *chiding*, becauſe this ſort of *Correction* never produces any *Good*, farther than it ſerves to raiſe *Shame* and *Abhorrence* of the Miſcarriage that brought it on them. And if the greateſt part of the Trouble be not the Senſe that they have done amiſs, and the Apprehenſion that they have drawn on themſelves the juſt Diſpleaſure of their beſt *Friends*, the Pain of *Whipping* will work but an imperfect Cure; it only patches

patches up for the preſent and skins it over, but reaches not to the bottôm of the *Sore.* Ingenuous *Shame,* and the *Apprehenſions* of Diſpleaſure, are the only true *Reſtraints.* Theſe alone ought to hold the *Reins,* and keep the *Child* in Order; but *corporal* Puniſhments muſt neceſſarily loſe that Effect, and wear out the Senſe of *Shame,* where they frequently return. *Shame* in *Children* has the ſame place that *Modeſty* has in *Women,* which cannot be kept, if often tranſgreſs'd againſt. And as to the Apprehenſion of *Diſpleaſure* in the *Parents,* that will come to be very inſignificant, if the Marks of that *Diſpleaſure* quickly ceaſe, and a few *Blows* fully expiate. *Parents* ſhould well conſider what Faults in their *Children* are weighty enough to deſerve the *Declaration* of their *Anger:* But when their Diſpleaſure is once declar'd to a degree that carries any Puniſhment with it, they ought not preſently to lay by the Severity of their *Brows,* but to reſtore their Children to their former *Grace* with ſome difficulty, and delay a full Reconciliation till their Conformity and more than ordinary Merit make good their Amendment. If this be not ſo ordered, *Puniſhment* will by Familiarity become a meer Thing of Courſe, and loſe all its Influence. Offending, being chaſtis'd, and then forgiven, will be thought as natural and neceſſary, as Noon, Night, and Morning following one another.

Tho' *Reputation* be not the true Principle and Meaſure of *Virtue,* (for that is the Knowledge of a Man's *Duty,* and the Satisfaction there is in obeying his *Maker,* in following the Dictates of that *Light* God has given, with the Hopes of *Acceptation* and *Reward*) yet it is that which comes neareſt to it: And being the Teſtimony and Applauſe that other Peoples Reaſon, as it were by a common Conſent, gives to virtuous and well-order'd Actions, it is the proper Guide and Encouragement of *Children,* 'till they grow able to judge for themſelves, and to find what is right by their own Reaſon.

This

This Conſideration may direct *Parents* how to manage themſelves in Reproving and Commending their *Children:* the *Rebukes* and *Chidings* which their Faults will ſometimes make hardly to be avoided, ſhould not only be in ſober, grave, and unpaſſionate Words, but alſo alone and in private: But the Commendations *Children* deſerve, they ſhould receive before others: This doubles the *Reward*, by ſpreading their *Praiſe*; but the backwardneſs *Parents* ſhew in divulging their *Faults*, will make them ſet a greater Value on their *Credit* themſelves, and teach them to be the more careful to preſerve the good Opinion of others, while they think they have it: But when being expos'd to *Shame* by publiſhing their Miſcarriages, they gave it up for loſt, that Check upon them is taken off, and they will be the leſs careful to preſerve others good Thoughts of them, the more they ſuſpect that their *Reputation* with them is already blemiſhed.

But if a right Courſe be taken with *Children* there will not be ſo much need of the Application of the common *Rewards* and *Puniſhments* as we imagine, and as the general Practice has eſtabliſh'd; for all their innocent Folly, Playing and childiſh Actions, are to be left perfectly free and unreſtrain'd, as far as they can conſiſt with the Reſpect due to thoſe that are preſent, and that with the greateſt Allowance. If theſe Faults of their *Age*, rather than of the *Children* themſelves, were, as they ſhould be, left only to Time and Imitation, and Riper Years to cure, *Children* would eſcape a great deal of miſapply'd and uſeleſs *Correction*, which either fails to overpower the natural Diſpoſition of their *Childhood*, and ſo by an ineffectual Familiarity makes *Correction* in other caſes of leſs uſe, or elſe if it be of force to reſtrain the natural Gaiety of that *Age*, it ſerves only to ſpoil the Temper both of Body and Mind. If the Noiſe and Buſtle of their *Play* prove at any time inconvenient, or unſuitable to the Place or Company they are in, a Look or a Word from the *Father* or *Mother*, if they have eſta-

bliſh'd

bliſh'd the Authority they ſhould, will be enough either to remove or quiet them for that time. But this gameſom Humour, which is wiſely adapted by Nature to their Age and Temper, ſhould rather be encouraged to keep up their *Spirits*, and improve their *Strength* and *Health*, than curb'd or reſtrain'd; and the chief Art is, to make all that they have to do Sport and Play too.

The Charging of *Childrens* Memories upon all Occaſions with Rules and Precepts, is a great Fault in the ordinary Method of *Education:* They often do not underſtand, and commonly as ſoon forget as they are told them. If it be ſome Action you would have done, or done otherwiſe, whenever they forget, or do it aukwardly, make them do it over and over again 'till they are perfect. You will by this ſee whether it be an Action they can do, or is fit to be expected of them. For ſometimes *Children* are bid to do things, which upon Trial they are found not able to do, and had need be taught and exercis'd to before they are requir'd to do them. But it is much eaſier for a *Tutor* to Command than to Teach. By repeating the ſame Action 'till it be grown habitual in them, the Performance will not depend upon Memory and Reflexion, the Concomitant of Prudence and *Age*, and not of *Childhood*, but will be natural in them. Thus bowing to a Gentleman who ſalutes him, and looking in his Face when he ſpeaks to him, is by conſtant uſe as natural to a Well-bred Man, as breathing; it requires no Thought, no Reflexion. Having this way cur'd in your *Child* any Fault, it is cur'd for ever. And thus one by one you may weed them all out, and plant what *Habits* you pleaſe.

I have ſeen *Parents* ſo heap *Rules* on their *Children*, that it was impoſſible for the poor *little Ones* to remember a tenth part of them, much leſs to obſerve them. However, they were either by *Words* or *Blows* corrected for the Breach of thoſe multiply'd and often very impertinent Precepts; whence it naturally follow'd, that the Children minded not what was ſaid to them, when it

was

was evident to them, that no Attention they were capable of, was ſufficient to preſerve them from *Tranſgreſſion*, and the Rebukes which follow'd it.

Let therefore your *Rules* to your Son be as few as poſſible, and rather fewer than more than ſeem abſolutely neceſſary; for if you burden him with many *Rules*, he muſt either be very often *puniſh'd*, which will be of ill Conſequence, by making Puniſhment too frequent and familiar, or elſe you muſt let the Tranſgreſſions of ſome of your *Rules* go unpuniſh'd, by which they will of courſe grow contemptible, and your Authority become cheap to him; make but few Laws, but ſee they be well obſerv'd when once made. Few *Years* require but few *Laws*, and as his Age increaſes, when one Rule is by Practice well Eſtabliſh'd, you may add another.

But pray remember, *Children* are not to be taught by *Rules*, which will be always ſlipping out of their Memories; what you think neceſſary of them to do, ſettle in them by an indiſpenſible Practice, as often as the Occaſion returns, and if it be poſſible, make Occaſions. This will beget *Habits* in them, which being once eſtabliſh'd, operate of themſelves eaſily and naturally, without the Aſſiſtance of the Memory. Keep them ſtrictly to the Practice of what you would have grow into a Habit in them, by kind Words and gentle Admonitions, rather as minding them of what they forget, than by harſh *Rebukes* and *Chidings*, as if they were wilfully guilty. Do not endeavour to ſettle too many Habits at once, leſt by Variety you confound him, and ſo perfect none. When conſtant Cuſtom has made any one thing eaſy and natural to them, and they practiſe it without Reflexion, you may then go on to another.

This Method of teaching *Children* by a repeated *Practice*, and the ſame Action done over and over again, under the Eye and Direction of the *Tutor*, 'till they have got the Habit of doing it well, and not by relying on *Rules* truſted to their Memories, has ſo many Advantages, which way ever we conſider it, that I cannot but wonder

wonder (if ill Cuſtoms could be wonder'd at in any thing) how it could poſſibly be ſo much neglected.

I ſhall name one more that comes now in my way. By this Method we ſhall ſee whether what is requir'd of him be adapted to his Capacity, and any way ſuited to the Child's natural Genius and Conſtitution; for that too muſt be conſider'd in a right *Education*. We muſt not hope wholly to change their original Tempers, nor make the Gay, Penſive and Grave, nor the Melancholy Sportive, without ſpoiling them. God has ſtampt certain Characters upon Mens *Minds*, which, like their *Shapes*, may perhaps be a little mended, but can hardly be totally alter'd and transform'd into the contrary.

He therefore that is about *Children*, ſhould well ſtudy their Natures and Aptitudes, and ſee by often Trials what turn they eaſily take, and what becomes them; obſerve what their native *Stock* is, how it may be improv'd and what it is fit for. He ſhould conſider what they want, whether they be capable of having it wrought into them by *Induſtry*, and incorporated there by *Practice*, and whether it be worth while to endeavour it. For in many caſes, all that we can do, or ſhould aim at, is to make the beſt of what Nature has given to prevent the Vices and Faults to which ſuch a Conſtitution is moſt inclin'd, and give it all the Advantages it is capable of. Every one's natural Genius ſhould be carry'd as far as it could, but to attempt the putting another upon him, will be but Labour in vain; and what is ſo plaiſter'd on, will at leaſt ſit but untowardly, and have always hanging to it the Ungracefulneſs of Conſtraint and Affectation.

Affectation is not, I confeſs, an early Fault of *Childhood*, or the Product of untaught Nature: It is a *Weed* which grows not in the wild uncultivated Waſte, but in Garden-Plots, under the negligent Hand, or unskilful Care of a *Gardiner*. Management, Inſtruction, and ſome Senſe of the Neceſſity of *Breeding*, are requiſite to make any one capable of *Affectation*, which endeavours to correct

correct natural Defect, and has always the laudable Aim of pleaſing, tho' it always miſſes it, and the more it labours to put on Gracefulneſs, the farther it is from it: For this Reaſon it is the more carefully to be watch'd, becauſe it is the proper Fault of *Education*; a perverted *Education* indeed, but ſuch as *young* People often fall into, either by their own Miſtake, or the ill Conduct of thoſe about them.

He who will examine wherein that Gracefulneſs lies, which always pleaſes, will find it ariſes from the natural Coherence, which appears between the thing done, and ſuch a Temper of Mind as cannot but be approv'd of, as ſuitable to the Occaſion. We cannot but be pleas'd with an human friendly civil Temper, wherever we meet with it. A Mind free, and Maſter of itſelf and all its Actions, not low and narrow, not haughty and inſolent, not blemiſh'd with any great Defect, is what every one is taken with. The Actions which naturally flow from ſuch a well-form'd Mind, pleaſe us alſo as the genuine Marks of it, and being as it were natural Emanations from the Spirit and Diſpoſition within, cannot but be eaſy and unconſtrain'd. This ſeems to me to be that Beauty which ſhines thro' ſome Mens Actions, ſets off all that they do, and takes with all they come near, when by a conſtant Practice they have faſhion'd their Carriage, and made all thoſe Expreſſions of Civility and Reſpect, which Nature or Cuſtom has eſtabliſh'd in Converſation, ſo eaſy to themſelves, that they ſeem not artificial or ſtudy'd, but naturally to flow from a Sweetneſs of Mind, and a well-turn'd Diſpoſition.

On the other ſide, *Affectation* is an aukward and forc'd Imitation of what would be genuine and eaſy, wanting the Beauty that accompanies what is natural, becauſe there is always a Diſagreement between the outward Action and the *Mind* within, one of theſe two ways.

Either when a Man would outwardly put on a Diſpoſition of Mind, which then he really has not, but endeavours by a forc'd Carriage to make ſhew of, yet ſo that

that the Conſtraint he is under diſcovers itſelf: And thus Men affect ſometimes to appear Sad, Merry, or Kind, when in Truth they are not ſo.

The other is, when they do not endeavour to make ſhew of Diſpoſitions of Mind which they have not, but to expreſs thoſe they have by a Carriage not ſuited to them. Such in Converſation are all conſtrain'd Motions, Actions, Words, or Looks, which tho' deſign'd to ſhew either their Reſpect by Civility to the Company, or their Satisfaction and Eaſineſs in it, are not yet natural and genuine Marks of the one, or the other, but rather of ſome Defect or Miſtake in Imitation of others, without diſcerning what is graceful in them, or what is peculiar to their Characters.

Affectation of all kinds whenceſoever it proceeds, is always offenſive, becauſe we naturally hate whatever is Counterfeit, and condemn thoſe who have nothing better to recommend themſelves by.

Plain and rough Nature left to itſelf, is much better than an Artificial Ungracefulneſs, and ſuch ſtudy'd ways of being ill-faſhion'd. The want of an Accompliſhment, or ſome Defect in our Behaviour, coming ſhort of the utmoſt Gracefulneſs, often ſcapes Obſervation and Cenſure: But *Affectation* in any part of our Carriage, is lighting up a Candle to our Defects, and never fails to make us be taken notice of either as wanting Senſe, or wanting Sincerity. This *Governors* ought the more diligently to look after, becauſe, as I have obſerv'd, 'tis an acquir'd Uglineſs owing to a miſtaken *Education*; few being guilty of it, but thoſe who pretend to breeding, and would not be thought ignorant of what is faſhionable and becoming in Converſation: It has often its riſe from the lazy Admonitions of thoſe who give Rules and propoſe Examples, without joining Practice with their Inſtructions, and making their *Pupils* repeat the Action in their ſight, that they may correct what is indecent or conſtrain'd in it, 'till it be perfected into an habitual and becoming Eaſineſs.

Manners,

Manners, as they call it, about which *Children* are ſo often perplex'd and have ſo many goodly Exhortations made them by their wiſe *Maids* and *Governeſſes*, are rather to be learn'd by *Example* than *Rules*; and then Children, if they are kept out of ill Company, will take a Pride to behave themſelves prettily after the Faſhion of others, perceiving themſelves eſteem'd and commended for it. But if by a little Negligence in this part, the *Boy* ſhould not put off his *Hat*, nor make *Legs* very gracefully, a Dancing Maſter will cure that Defect and wipe off all that plainneſs of Nature which the Alamode People call *Clowniſhneſs*. And ſince nothing appears to me to give *Children* ſo much becoming Confidence and Behaviour, and ſo to raiſe them to the Converſation of thoſe above their Age, as *Dancing*; they ſhould, I think, be taught to dance as ſoon as they are capable of learning it; for tho' this conſiſts only in outward Gracefulneſs of Motion; yet, I know not how, it gives *Children* manly Thoughts and Carriage more than any thing; but otherwiſe I would not have *little Children* much tormented about *Punctilio's* or Niceties of Breeding.

Never trouble yourſelf about thoſe Faults in them which you know *Age* will cure: And therefore want of well-faſhion'd Civility in the Carriage, while Civility is not wanting in the Mind, (for there you muſt take care to plant it early) ſhould be the *Parents* leaſt Care; while they are young, if the Child's tender Mind be fill'd with a Veneration for his *Parents* and *Teachers*, which conſiſts in Love and Eſteem, and a Fear to offend them, and with *Reſpect* and *Good-will* to all People, that Reſpect will of itſelf teach thoſe ways of expreſſing it, which he obſerves moſt acceptable. Be ſure to keep up in him the Principles of Good-nature and Kindneſs, make them as habitual as you can, by Credit and Commendation, and the good things accompanying that State. And when they have taken Root in his Mind, and are ſettled there by a continual Practice, fear not, but the Ornaments of Converſation, and the Outſide of faſhionable

able *Manners*, will come in their due time; if when they are remov'd out of their *Maids* Care, they are put into the Hands of a *Well-bred* Man to be their Governor.

Any *Careleſsneſs* is to be born with in *Children*, while they are very *young*, if it carries not with it the Marks of Pride or Ill-nature; but thoſe, whenever they appear in any Action, are to be corrected immediately by the ways abovemention'd. What I have ſaid concerning *Manners*, I would not have ſo underſtood, as if I meant, that thoſe who have the Judgment to do it, ſhould not gently faſhion the Motion and Carriage of *Children*, when they are very *young*. It would be of great Advantage if they had People about them from their being firſt able to go, that had the Skill, and would take the right way to do it: That which I complain of is, the wrong Courſe which is uſually taken in this Matter; *Children* who were never taught any ſuch thing as Behaviour, are often, eſpecially when Strangers are preſent, chid for having ſome way or other fail'd in *good Manners*, and have on that ſcore Reproof and Precepts heap'd upon them, concerning putting off their *Hats*, or making of *Legs*, &c. Tho' in this thoſe concern'd pretend to correct the *Child*, yet in truth for the moſt part it is but to cover their own *Shame*, and they lay the Blame on the poor *little Ones*, ſometimes paſſionately enough, to divert it from themſelves, for fear the Byſtanders ſhould impute the *Child*'s ill Behaviour to their Want of Care and Skill.

The *Children* themſelves are never one jot better'd by ſuch occaſional Lectures. They at other times ſhould be ſhewn what to do, and by reiterated Actions be faſhion'd beforehand into the *Practice* of what is fit and becoming, and not told and taught to do upon the ſpot what they have never been accuſtom'd to, nor know how to do as they ſhould. To hare and rate them thus at every turn, is not to teach them, but to vex and torment them to no purpoſe: They ſhould be let alone, rather than chid for a Fault which is none of theirs, nor is in their Power to

mend

mend for ſpeaking to. It were much better their natural Childiſh Negligence, or Plainneſs, ſhould be left to the Care of Riper Years, than that they ſhould frequently have Rebukes miſ-placed upon them, which neither do nor can give them graceful Motions. If their *Minds* are well diſpos'd and principled with *inward* Civility, a great part of the Roughneſs, which ſticks to the *Outſide* for want of better Teaching, Time, and Obſervation will rub off as they grow up, if they are bred in good Company; but if in ill, all the *Rules* in the World, all the *Corrections* imaginable, will not be able to poliſh them; for you muſt take this for a certain Truth, that let them have what Inſtructions you will, and never ſo learned Lectures of *Breeding* daily inculcated upon them, that which will moſt influence their Carriage, will be the Company they converſe with, and the Faſhion of thoſe about them. *Children*, nay and *Men* too, do moſt by Example; we are all a ſort of Camelions, that ſtill take a Tincture from things near us; nor is it to be wonder'd at in *Children*, who better underſtand what they *ſee*, than what they *hear*.

I mention'd above, one great Miſchief that came by *Servants* to *Children*, when by their Flatteries they take off the Edge and Force of the *Parents* Rebuke, and ſo leſſen their Authority. And here is another great Inconvenience which Children receive, from the ill Examples which they meet with among the meaner *Servants*.

They are wholly, if poſſible, to be kept from ſuch *Converſation*; for the Contagion of theſe ill Precedents, both in Civility and Virtue, horribly infects Children, as often as they come within reach of it; they frequently learn from unbred or debauch'd *Servants*, ſuch Language, untowardly Tricks and Vices, as otherwiſe they would poſſibly be ignorant of all their Lives.

'Tis a hard matter wholly to prevent the Miſchief; you will have very good Luck if you never have a Clowniſh or Vicious *Servant*, and if from ſuch your Children never get any Infection: But yet as much muſt be done towards

towards it as can be, and the *Children* kept as much as may be in the Company of their *Parents*, and thoſe to whoſe Care they are committed. To this purpoſe, their being in their Preſence ſhould be made eaſy to them; they ſhould be allow'd the Liberty and Freedom ſuitable to their Age, and not be held under unneceſſary *Reſtraints*, when in their *Parents* or *Governors* ſight. If it be a Priſon to them, 'tis no wonder they ſhould not like it: They muſt not be hinder'd from being *Children*, or from playing or doing as *Children*, but from doing ill; all other Liberty is to be allow'd them: Next, to make them in Love with the Company of their Parents, they ſhould receive all good things there, and from their Hands. The *Servants* ſhould be hinder'd from making Court to them, by giving them *Strong Drink*, *Wine*, *Fruit*, *Play-things*, and other ſuch Matters which may make them in love with their Company.

I ſhall in the following Pages treat of *Widows*, and therein touch a little again upon this Duty of *Educating* Children, as it has Reſpect to thoſe of them who are Mothers.

The *WIDOW.*

THOUGH the State of *Widowhood* ſuperſedes thoſe *Duties* which were terminated merely in the Perſon of the *Husband*, yet it endears thoſe which may be paid to his Aſhes; *Love is ſtrong as Death*, and therefore, when it is pure and genuine, cannot be extinguiſhed by it, but burns like the *Funeral* Lamps of old, even in *Vaults* and *Charnel-Houſes*. The conjugal *Love*, tranſplanted into the *Grave* as into a finer *Mold*, improves into *Piety*, and lays a kind of Sacred Obligation upon the *Widow*, to perform all Offices of Reſpect and Kindneſs, which his *Remains* are capable of.

Now thoſe *Remains* are of three ſorts, his *Body*, his *Memory*, his *Children*. The moſt proper Expreſſion of her Love to the firſt is in giving it an honourable *Interment*. I mean not ſuch as may vye with the *Poland* Extravagance, of which 'tis obſerved, that two or three near ſucceeding *Funerals* ruin the Family, but prudently proportion'd to his Quality and Fortune. Her Zeal to his Corps ſhould not injure a nobler Relick of him, his *Children*; and this Decency is a much better Inſtance of her Kindneſs, than all thoſe tragical Paſſions with which ſome *Women* ſeem tranſported towards their dead *Huſbands*; thoſe frantick Embraces and Careſſes of a Carcaſe betray a little too much the Senſuality of their *Love*. And it is ſomething obſervable, that thoſe vehement Paſſions quickly exhauſt themſelves, and by a kind of Sympathetick Efficacy, as the Body on which their Affection was fix'd moulders, ſo does that alſo; nay it often

attends not thoſe leiſurely Degrees of Diſſolution, but by a more precipitate Motion ſeems rather to vaniſh than conſume.

The more valuable Kindneſs therefore is that to his *Memory*; let the Widow endeavour to embalm that, and keep it from periſhing. By this innocent *Magick*, as the *Egyptians* are ſaid to have done by a more Guilty, ſhe may converſe with the *Dead*, repreſent him to her own Thoughts, that this Life may ſtill be repeated to her. And as in a broken *Mirror*, the Refraction multiplies the *Images*, ſo by his Diſſolution every Hour repreſents diſtinct *Ideas* of him, and ſhe ſees him the oftner for his being hid from her Eyes. But as they uſe not to embalm without *Odours*, ſo ſhe is not only to preſerve, but to perfume his *Memory*, render it as fragrant as ſhe can, not only to herſelf but others, by reviving the Remembrance of whatever was Praiſe-worthy in him, vindicating him from all Calumnies and falſe Accuſations, and ſtifling or allaying even true ones, as much as ſhe can. Indeed a *Widow* can no way better provide for her own Honour, than by this Tenderneſs of her *Husband's*.

There is yet another Expreſſion of it, inferior to none of the former, and that is, the ſetting ſuch a value upon her Relation to him, as to do nothing unworthy of it. 'Twas the dying Charge of *Auguſtus* to his Wife *Livia*, *Behave thyſelf well, and remember our Marriage*. And ſhe who has been Wife to a Perſon of Honour, muſt ſo remember it, as not to do any thing below herſelf, or which he, could he have foreſeen it, ſhould juſtly have been aſham'd of.

The laſt *Tribute* ſhe can pay him, is in his *Children*: Theſe he leaves as his Proxies, to receive the Kindneſs of which himſelf is uncapable. The *Children* of a *Widow* may claim a double Portion of the *Mother's* Love, one upon their native Right as *Hers*, the other as a Requeſt in Right of their dead *Father*; and indeed ſince ſhe is to ſupply the Place of both *Parents*, 'tis but neceſſary

ceſſary ſhe ſhould put on the Affections of both, and to the Tenderneſs of a Mother, add the Care and Conduct of a *Father*.

Let her ſhew this chiefly in the well *Educating* them, and in the prudent Management of their Fortunes; an Order that is ſometimes unhappily inverted, and *Mothers* are ſo concern'd to have the Eſtate proſper in their *Tuition*, that the *Children* ſuffer by their unſeaſonable Frugality; to ſave a little Expence, they deny them the Advantage of an ingenuous and gentile *Breeding*; ſwell their Eſtates perhaps to a vaſt Bulk, but ſo contract and narrow their Minds, that they know not how to diſpoſe them to any real Benefit of themſelves or others, which is one of the moſt pernicious Parſimonies imaginable. A *Mother* by this ſeems to adopt the *Fortune*, and abdicate the *Child*, who is only made the Beaſt to bear thoſe Loads of *Wealth* ſhe will lay on, and which ſhe evidently owns as the greater Treaſure, ſince in Tenderneſs to that ſhe neglects him.

Yet ſometimes the ſame Effects ſpring from another Cauſe, and *Children* are ill-bred, not becauſe the *Mother* grudges the Charge, but out of a Feminine Tenderneſs, which permits her not to part with them to the proper Places for their *Education*; and this, tho' not ſo ignoble a Motive as the other, is of no leſs Miſchief, at leaſt to her Sons, who being by it confin'd to home, are conſequently condemn'd to be poiſon'd, if with nothing elſe, yet with the Flatteries of *Servants* and *Tenants*, who think thoſe the beſt Expedients to ſecure their own Station; and with theſe the *young Maſter* or *Landlord* is ſo blown up, that as if his Manours were the Confines of the World, he can look at nothing beyond them. By this Means, when at laſt he breaks looſe from his Mother's Arms, and comes abroad, he expects ſcarce to find his Equals, much leſs his Betters; he thinks he is ſtill to receive the ſame fawning Adorations, which he was us'd to at home, and being poſſeſt with this inſolent Expectation, he will ſcarce be undeceiv'd, but at the Price of many

Affronts, and may perhaps buy his Experience with the loſs of his Life, by his ill Manners drawing on a Quarrel in which he finally periſhes. That this is no impoſſible Suppoſition, ſome unhappy *Mothers* have found to their unſpeakable Affliction.

'Tis not to be deny'd, but there are alſo Dangers conſequent to the Breeding *Children* abroad; Vice having inſinuated itſelf even into the Places of *Erudition*, and having not only as many, but the very ſame *Academies* with Virtue and Learning. The very great Neglect of Diſcipline in thoſe Places where *Youth* is to receive its ſtrongeſt Tincture of Virtue or Vice; the winking at its Follies, nay its Debaucheries, for mean and mercenary Ends, and the zealous Endeavours that are us'd to eſtabliſh certain political Principles, more than thoſe of Religion and Morality, are, with the never too much to be lamented want of Example, great Occaſions of Diſguſt againſt an *Education* out of the Parents Eye; but in this we are not ſo much to conſider what is beſt, as what is the leaſt ill Diſpoſure of *Children*. And in that Competition ſure the home *Education* will be caſt; for there they may ſuck all the *Venom*, and nothing of the *Antidote*; they will not only be taught baſe things, but, as I before obſerv'd, by the baſeſt *Tutors*, ſuch as will add all the moſt ſordid Circumſtances to the improving of a Crime; whereas abroad they are not like to meet with any, whoſe Intereſt it is ſo much to make them Vicious; and they may meet with many, as ill as the World is, who may by their Leſſons, and their Lives too, direct them to the Right way in which they ought to walk. The various ſorts of Learning they may acquire, will not only prove a uſeful Divertiſement, the want of which is the great Spring of Miſchief; but will, if rightly apply'd, furniſh them with ingenuous and virtuous Principles; ſuch as may ſet them above all vile and ignoble Practices. There ſeems therefore a Conſpiration of Motives to wreſt the Child from the reluctting *Mother*, and to perſuade her for a while to deny her-

herſelf that Deſire of her Eyes, that ſo he may at laſt anſwer the more rational Deſire of her Heart.

As to the other Part of her Obligation, the Managing of their Fortune, there is the ſame *Rule* for her as for other Perſons, that have *Truſts*, to do as for themſelves, that is with the ſame Care and Diligence, if not greater, as in her own peculiar Concern. I do not ſay that ſhe ſhall confound the *Property*, and make it indeed her own, by applying it to her particular Uſe. A thing I fear which is too often done, eſpecially by the Gayer ſorts of *Widows*, who, to keep their own Equipage, do ſometimes incroach upon the Son's Peculiar. And I wiſh even that, tho' bad enough, were the only Caſe where it was done, but 'tis ſometimes to make her a better Prize to a ſecond *Husband:* She goes into another *Family*, and, as if ſhe were a *Colony* ſent out by her *Son*, he muſt pay for the planting her there. Indeed the oft repeating this Injury has advanced it now into a *Cuſtom*, and the Management of the *Minor*'s Eſtate is reckon'd on as part of the *Widow*'s Fortune. But I confeſs I ſee not what there is in the Title of a *Mother* that can legitimate her defrauding her *Child*, it rather envenoms the Crime, and adds Unnaturalneſs to Deceit; beſides, 'tis a prepoſterous ſort of Guilt. *Orphans* and *Widows* are in Scripture linkt together, as Objects of God's and good Mens Pity, and of ill Mens Oppreſſion; and how ill, alas! does Civil War look among Fellow-Sufferers? The *Widow* that injures the *Orphan*, is like that uncouth Oppreſſion *Solomon* ſpeaks of, *A poor Man that oppreſſeth the Poor, is like a ſweeping Rain, which leaveth no Food.* Such kind of Rapines are as exceſſive in their Degree, as prodigious in their Kind; and I believe there are more Inſtances of *Sons*, who have ſuffer'd more by the *Guardianſhip* of *Mothers*, than they could probably have done by the Outrage of *Strangers*.

How well ſuch *Mothers* anſwer their Obligations to their dead *Husbands* I muſt leave it to their own Conſciences to diſcuſs. I ſhall only offer them theſe Steps of

Gradation, by which to proceed. *Injuſtice* of any ſort is a great Sin, and when 'tis a Matter of *Truſt*, 'tis complicated with Treachery alſo; but of all *Truſts*, thoſe to the *Dead* have always been eſteemed the moſt ſacred. If they can find any Allay to theſe, by the two remaining Circumſtances, that is, the *Truſt* of a *Husband*, and the *Intereſt* of a Child, I ſhall confeſs them very ſubtle Caſuiſts.

I have hitherto ſpoke of what the *Widow* owes to her dead *Husband*; but there is alſo ſomewhat of peculiar Obligation in Relation to herſelf. *God*, who has plac'd us in this World to purſue the Intereſts of a better, directs all the ſignal Acts of his Providence to that End, and intends we ſhould ſo interpret them. Thus every great Change that occurs is deſign'd, either to recal us from a wrong way, or to quicken our Pace in the Right; and a *Widow* may more than conjecture, that when *God* takes away the Mate of her Boſom, and reduces her to a Solitude, he does by it found a Retreat from the lighter Jollities and Gaieties of the World: And as in compliance with a civil Cuſtom, ſhe immures herſelf, ſits in Darkneſs for a while, ſo ſhe ſhould put on a more retir'd Temper of Mind, a more ſtrict and ſevere Behaviour, and that not to be caſt off with her *Veil*, but to be the conſtant Dreſs of her *Widowhood*. Indeed this State, as it requires a great *Sobriety* and Piety, ſo it affords many Advantages towards it. The Apoſtle tells us, that *ſhe who is married careth for the Things of the World, how ſhe may pleaſe her Husband*. There are many Things which are but the due Compliance of a Wife, which yet are great Avocations and Interruptions of a ſtrict Devotion, when ſhe is manumitted from that Subjection, when ſhe has leſs of *Martha*'s Care of *ſerving*, ſhe is then at Liberty to chooſe *Mary*'s Part; ſhe has her Time and her Fortune at her own Command, and conſequently may much more abound in the Works both of *Piety* and *Charity*. We find *God* himſelf retrench'd the *Wife*'s Power of binding her own Soul;

Soul; her Vows were totally inſignificant, without her Husband's Confirmation; but the *Widow* might devote herſelf to what degree ſhe pleas'd; her *Piety* has no Reſtraint from any other inconſiſtent Obligation, but may ſwell as high as it can. Theſe Hours, which were before her Husband's Right, ſeem now to devolve on God, the grand Proprietor of our Time. That Diſcourſe and free Converſe with which ſhe entertain'd him, ſhe may now convert into Colloquies and Spiritual Intercourſe with her Maker; and that *Love*, which was only *human* before, by the Change of its Object acquires a Sublimity, is exalted into *Divine*; from loyal Duty and conjugal Affection, becomes the eternal Work and Happineſs of *Angels*, the Order of a *Cherubim*; thus may ſhe in a higher Senſe verify *Sampſon*'s Riddle, *fetch Honey out of a Carcaſe*, make her Husband's Aſhes, like thoſe of the Heifer under the Law, her *Purification*; his *Corruption* may help her to put on *Incorruption*, and her Loſs of a *Temporary* Comfort may inſtate her in an eternal.

And as herſelf, ſo her Fortune may alſo be conſecrated. Indeed, if ſhe be, that will alſo; if ſhe have made an Eſcape out of *Egypt*, there ſhall not a Hoof be left behind her, no Part of her Poſſeſſions will be aſſign'd to Vanity and Exceſs; ſhe who has really devoted herſelf to Piety, faſted and pray'd with *Anna*, will alſo be full of good Works and Alms-Deeds with *Tabitha:* She may thus be a *Mother* when ſhe ceaſes to bear, and though ſhe no more increaſe one Family, ſhe may ſupport many. *Fruitfulneſs* can be but a *Happineſs*; *Compaſſion* is a *Virtue*, nay indeed 'tis a greater and more certain *Happineſs*. A Child is not brought forth but with Pangs and Anguiſh, but a Work of Mercy is produced not only with Eaſe, but Delight. Beſides ſhe that bears a Child, knows not whether it may prove a *Bleſſing* or a *Curſe*. But *Charity* gives a certain Title to a *Bleſſing*, and engages the moſt ſolvent Paymaſter, God himſelf, who owns all ſuch Diſburſements as a Loan to him.

There was in the Primitive Times an Eccleſiaſtical Order of *Widows*, which is mentioned in *Timothy*, whoſe whole Miniſtry was devoted to *Charity*; they were indeed of the poorer Sort, fit rather to receive than give Alms; yet the leſs they could do with their Purſes, the more was required of their Perſons, the humbler Offices of waſhing the *Saints Feet*, the careful Task of *bringing up Children*, and a diligent *Attendance on every good Work*: And ſure there is a parity of reaſon, that thoſe who upon the Score of their Wealth exempt themſelves from thoſe laborious Services, ſhould commute for it by more liberal Alms. In the Warmth and Zeal of Chriſtianity, *Women* of the higheſt Quality perform'd both ſorts of *Charity*, forgot their Greatneſs in their Condeſcenſions, yet aſſum'd it again in their Bounty; founded *Hoſpitals*, and yet with a *Labour of Love*, diſdain'd not ſometimes to ſerve in them. But theſe are Examples not like to be tranſcrib'd in our Days: Greatneſs is now grown to ſuch an unwieldineſs, that it cannot ſtoop, tho' to the moſt chriſtian Office, and yet can as little ſoar up in any magnificent *Charities*. It ſtands, like *Nebuchadnezzar*'s golden Image, a vaſt Bulk only to be ador'd.

Now certainly if any Women be qualify'd to avert this Reproach, they muſt be the *Dowagers* of great Families and Fortunes; they have none to control their Viſits to the ſick and afflicted, or to reſent a Diſparagement from their Humility; neither have they an Account to give of their Poſſeſſions to any but God and themſelves. To him ſure they can bring none ſo like to procure them the *Eulogy* of *well done thou good and faithful Servant*, as a Catalogue of their *Alms*; nor indeed can they any other way diſpoſe of their Fortune ſo much to their own Contentment. They may poſſibly cloy and ſatiate their Senſes, make Proviſion for the Fleſh, but that no way ſatisfies their *Reaſon*, much leſs their *Conſcience*; the Soul, which is the ſuperior Part, is quite left out in that Diſtribution; nothing is communicated to it, but the Guilt of thoſe dear-bought Exceſſes; the only way it has

has to be a Sharer in their Wealth, is by a charitable Diſpenſing. The Poor are its Proxies as well as God's; and tho' in all other Reſpects, we ſay to the Soul, as the *Pſalmiſt* does to God, *My Goods extend not to Thee*; yet by this way it becomes not only a Partaker, but the chief Proprietor, and all is laid out for its Uſe. *Charity* gains not only an indefeaſible Title to the happy *Reverſion* of Heaven, but it has a great deal in preſent *Poſſeſſion*, a mighty rational Complaiſance in the right applying of Wealth, and doing that with it, for which 'twas deſign'd; yet more, it gives a ſenſitive Delight; nothing being more agreeable to human Nature, than the doing good to its own kind. A ſeaſonable Alms leaves a greater Exultation and Tranſport in the *Giver*, than it can ordinarily raiſe in the *Receiver*. This indeed is a way to elude the ſevere Denunciation of the Apoſtle: *A Widow that liveth in this Pleaſure, is not dead while ſhe liveth*; but on the contrary ſhall live when ſhe dies, when ſhe reſigns her Breath, ſhall improve her Being. The *Prayers of the Poor*, like a benign Gale, ſhall aſſiſt her Flight to the regions of Bliſs, and ſhe, who has here cheriſh'd the afflicted *Members*, ſhall there be indiſſolubly united to their glorious *Head*.

And now, methinks, *Widowhood* under this Aſpect is quite transform'd, is not ſo forlorn, ſo deſolate an Eſtate as 'tis uſually eſteem'd; and would all Widows uſe but this Expedient, thus devote themſelves to *Piety* and *Charity*, it would like the *Healing Tree* ſweeten theſe Waters of *Marah*, render the Condition not only ſupportable but pleaſant, and they would not need to make ſuch affrighted, ſuch diſadvantageous Eſcapes as many do from it. 'Tis true, the Apoſtle's Affirmation is unqueſtionable, that the *Wife, when her Husband is dead, is at Liberty to be marry'd to whom ſhe will*; but the Advice he ſubjoins is authentick too, *ſhe is happier if ſhe ſo abide*; ſhe that may ſolace herſelf in the Society, in the Love of her God, makes an ignoble Deſcent to human Embraces. She that may purchaſe Heaven with her Wealth,

buys a very dear Bargain of the beſt *Husband* on Earth. Indeed upon a mere ſecular Account, it ſeems not very prudent to relinquiſh both Liberty and Property, to eſpouſe at the beſt a Subjection, but perhaps a *Slavery*. It reſembles the mad Frolicks of freed *Galley-Slaves*, who play away their Liberty as ſoon as they regain it.

Marriage is ſo great an Adventure, that one ſeems enough for the whole Life, for whether they have been proſperous or adverſe in the firſt, it does almoſt diſcourage a ſecond Attempt. She that has had a good *Husband*, may be ſuppos'd to have his Idea ſo fixt in her Heart, that it will be hard to introduce any new Form: She may farther very reaſonably doubt, that in this common Dearth of *Virtue*, two good *Husbands* will ſcarce fall to one *Woman*'s ſhare; and an *ill* one will become more intolerable to her, by the Reflexions ſhe will be apt to make on the *better*. On the other ſide, if ſhe has had a bad one, the Memory of what ſhe has ſuffer'd ſhould, methinks, be a competent Caution againſt new Adventures; yet Experience ſhews us that *Women*, tho' the weaker Sex, have commonly Fortitude enough to encounter and baffle all theſe Conſiderations. It is not therefore to be expected, that many will, by any thing that has or can be ſaid, be diverted from re marrying; and indeed ſhe that does not preſerve her *Widowhood* upon the Accounts before-mention'd, may perhaps better relinquiſh it: St. *Paul*, we ſee, adviſes thoſe *Widows*, who found no better *Employment* than *going from Houſe to Houſe*, that grew by their Vacancy to be *Tatlers and Buſy-Bodies*, ſhould marry again; it being the beſt way to fix theſe wandring Planets, to find them Buſineſs of their own at Home, that ſo they may not ramble abroad, to intermeddle with that of others; and the Truth is, they who cannot brook the Retiredneſs and Gravity which becomes a *Widow*, had better put themſelves in a State that leſs requires it; and if they reſolve not to conform their Minds to their Condition, to bring

bring their Condition to their Minds; but in the doing that, there will be ſome Cautions very neceſſary to be obſerved.

Common Decency requires, that there be a conſiderable Interval between the parting with one Husband, and the chooſing another. This has been ſo much obſerv'd by Nations that were at all civiliz'd, that we find *Numa* made it a *Law* that no *Widow* ſhould marry under ten Months, and if any did, ſhe was to ſacrifice as for the Expiation of a Crime. This continu'd in force many Ages after, inſomuch that when, upon Reaſons of State, *Auguſtus* found it uſeful to marry his Siſter *Octavia* to *Antonius*, nothing leſs than a Decree of the Senate could licenſe the anticipating the Time. So jealous Obſervers were they of this point of Civility, that they thought the whole State was concern'd in the Violation. 'Tis true, we have no *Law* in the Caſe, but we have ſomewhat of *Cuſtom*; I know not how long we ſhall have, ſince the frequent Breaches of it, threaten quite to cancel it; yet a *Woman* that is tender of her Honour, will ſcarce give her Example towards the reſcinding it. The Wounds of Grief are ſeldom heal'd by any Hand but that of Time, and therefore too ſudden a Cure ſhews the Heart was not deeply pierc'd; ſhe who can make her mourning *Veil* an Optick to draw a new *Lover* nearer to her ſight, gives Cauſe to ſuſpect the Sables were all without.

The next thing conſiderable is the equality of the Match. *Marriage* is ſo cloſe a Link, that to have it eaſy, 'tis good to have the *Parties* as even proportion'd as may be, eſpecially in reſpect of Quality and Fortune; in which it is to be wiſh'd there ſhould be no eminent Diſproportion; thoſe that meet moſt upon a Level, are leaſt ſubject to thoſe Upbraidings, that often attend a great Deſcent of either Party; it is therefore no prudent Motive by which ſome *Widows* are ſway'd, who marry only for a great Title, who often do not meet with ſo much of Obeiſance from Strangers, as they do with

Contempt

Contempt from their *Husbands* and his Relations. There have been many Examples of *Lords*, who have us'd Rich, but inferior Widows, like Spunges, ſqueez'd them to fill themſelves with their *Wealth*, and them only with the Air of a big Name. On the other ſide, for a Woman to marry very meanly, and too much below herſelf, is rather worſe; thoſe kind of Matches are ordinarily made in a tranſport of Paſſion, and when that abates and leaves her to ſober Reflexions, ſhe will probably be ſo angry with herſelf, that ſhe will ſcarce be well pleas'd with her *Husband*. A State of Subjection is a little ſweeten'd by the Worth and Dignity of the *Ruler*; for as it is more honourable, ſo 'tis alſo more eaſy, the ſerviler Spirits being of all others the moſt imperious in Command; and ſure 'twill not a little grate a Woman of Honour to think ſhe has made ſuch a one her *Maſter*, who perhaps would before have thought it a Preferment to have been her Servant. Farther, ſuch *Marriages* have commonly an ill Reflexion on the Modeſty of the *Woman*; it being uſually preſum'd, that where the Diſtance was ſo great as to diſcourage ſuch an Attempt on his Part, there was ſome Invitation on hers; thus upon all Accounts ſhe is very forlorn, who diſpoſes of herſelf in this vile Manner; yet 'tis too well known ſuch Matches have been frequently made, and the ſame Levity and Inconſideration may betray others to it: wherefore 'tis their Concern well to ballaſt their Minds, and to provide that their Paſſion never get the Aſcendent over their Reaſon.

Another very neceſſary Equality, is that of their Judgment as to *Religion*; I do not mean that they are to catechize each other as to every minute ſpeculative Point, but that they be of the ſame Profeſſion, ſo as to join together in the Worſhip of God. It is certainly very uncomfortable that thoſe who have ſo cloſely combin'd all other Intereſts, ſhould be diſunited in the greateſt, that one Church cannot hold them, whom one Houſe, one Bed does; and that Religion, which is in itſelf the moſt uniting Thing, ſhould be the only Diſagreement between them.

them. I know it is often made a Compact in ſuch *Matches*, that neither ſhall impoſe their Opinion upon the other; yet I doubt 'tis ſeldom kept, unleſs it be by thoſe whoſe Careleſsneſs of all Religion abates their Zeal to any one; but where they have any Earneſtneſs in their way, eſpecially where one Party thinks the other in a damnable Error, 'twill ſcarce be poſſible to reſtrain endeavouring to reduce them; and that Endeavour begets Diſputes, thoſe Diſputes Heats, thoſe Heats Diſguſts, and thoſe Diſguſts perhaps end in Averſion, by which Means at laſt their Affections grow as unreconcileable as their Opinions, and their Religious Jars draw on Domeſtick: Beſides, if none of theſe perſonal Debates happen, yet the *Education* of the *Children* will be matter of Diſpute; the one Parent will be ſtill countermining the other, each ſeeking to recover the other's Proſelytes; nay it introduces *Faction* into the inferior Parts of the Family too; the *Servants*, according to their different Perſuaſions, bandy in Leagues and Parties: Thus it endangers, if not utterly deſtroys, all Concord in Families; and this train of Miſchiefs ſhould methinks be a competent Prejudice againſt ſuch *Matches*.

There is yet a third Particular, wherein any great Diſproportion is much to be avoided, and that is in *Years*. The *Humours* of Youth and Age differ ſo widely, that there had need be a great deal of Skill to compoſe the *Diſcord* into a *Harmony*. When a young Woman marries an old Man, there are commonly Jealouſies on the one Part, and Loathings on the other; and if there be not an eminent degree of Diſcretion in one or both, there will be perpetual Diſagreements: But this is a Caſe that does not often happen among thoſe I now ſpeak to; for tho' the Avarice of *Parents* ſometimes forces *Maids* upon ſuch Matches, yet Widows who are their own Chooſers, ſeldom make ſuch Elections; the Inequality among them commonly falls on the other ſide, and *old Women* marry *young* Men. Indeed any *Marriage* is in ſuch a Folly and Dotage; they who muſt

ſuddenly

ſuddenly make their *Beds* in the Duſt, what ſhould they think of a nuptial Couch? To ſuch the anſwer of the Philoſopher is appoſite, who being demanded what was the fitteſt Time for marrying, reply'd, For the *young* not *yet*, for the *old* not at all.

But this Dotage becomes perfect Frenſy and Madneſs, when they chooſe young *Husbands*; this is an Accumulation of Abſurdities and Contradictions. The *Husband* and the *Wife* are but one Perſon, and yet at once *young* and *old*, freſh and wither'd; 'tis a reverſing the Decrees of Nature; and therefore 'twas no ill Anſwer, which *Dionyſius* the Tyrant gave his *Mother*, who in her Age deſign'd ſuch a Match; that by his regal Power he could not abrogate thoſe of Nature, or make it fit for her an *old Woman* to marry a *young Man*. 'Tis indeed an Inverſion of *Seaſons*, a confounding of the Calendar, making a mungrel Month of *May* and *December*, and the Conjunction proves as fatal as it is prodigious; it being ſcarce ever ſeen, that ſuch a Match proves tolerably happy. Indeed 'tis not imaginable how it ſhould; it is to be preſum'd, ſhe that marries ſo, muſt marry meanly, no young Man who does not need her Fortune, will take her Perſon; for tho' ſome have the Humour to give great Rates for inanimate Antiquities, yet none will take the living *gratis*. Thus ſhe never miſſes to be hated, by him ſhe marries: He looks on her as his Rack and Torment, thinks himſelf under the lingring Torture, devis'd by *Mezentius*, a *living* Body ty'd to a Dead. Nor muſt ſhe think to cure this by any the little Adulteries of Art; ſhe may buy Beauty, and yet can never make it her own; may paint, yet never be fair. 'Tis like enameling a Mud-wall, the courſeneſs of the Ground will ſpoil the Varniſh, and the greateſt exquiſiteneſs of Dreſs ſerves but to illuſtrate her native Blemiſhes; and thus all ſhe gains by this is, to make him ſcorn her as well as abhor her.

What can be more ridiculous than an *old* Woman gaily ſet out? It was not unaptly ſaid by *Diogenes* to ſuch a one;

one; *If this decking be for the living, you are deceiv'd; if for the dead, make haſte to them*; and I doubt not many young Husbands will be ready to ſay as much. Death ſometimes comes not quick enough to prevent an illegal parting. The Man bids adieu to the *Wife*, tho' not to her *Fortune*, takes that to maintain the Luxuries elſewhere, allows her ſome little Annuity, and makes her a Penſioner to her own Eſtate. Thus he has his Deſign, but ſhe has none of hers; he marry'd for her *Fortune*, and has it; ſhe for his *Perſon*, and has it not, and which is worſe, buys her Defeat with the loſs of all, he commonly leaving her as empty of *Money* as he found her of Wit.

This Condition is deplorable enough, and yet uſually it fails even of that Comfort, which is the laſt Reſerve of the Miſerable, I mean *Pity*; 'tis the Wiſeman's Queſtion, *Who will pity a Charmer, that is bitten with a Serpent.* He might have preſumed leſs on his Skill, and kept himſelf at a ſafer Diſtance; and ſure the like may be ſaid of her. Alas! what are feeble Charms, that ſhe ſhould expect by them to fix the giddy Appetites of Youth? And ſince ſhe could ſo preſume without Senſe, none will regret ſhe ſhould be convinced by Smart. Beſides, this is a Caſe wherein there have been a multitude of unhappy Precedents, which might have caution'd her. He that accidentally falls down an undiſcover'd Precipice, is pity'd for his Diſaſter; but he who ſtands a great while on the brink of it, looks down, and ſees the bottom ſtrew'd with the mingled Carcaſes of many that have thence fallen, if he ſhall deliberately caſt himſelf into their Company, the *Blame* quite extinguiſhes the *Pity:* He may aſtoniſh, but not melt the *Beholders.* And truly ſhe who caſts herſelf away in ſuch a Match, betrays not leſs but more Wilfulneſs. How many Ruins of unhappy *Women* preſent themſelves to her, like the Wrecks of old Veſſels, all ſplit upon this Rock? And if ſhe will needs ſteer her Courſe purpoſely to do the ſame, none ought to grudge her the Shipwreck ſhe ſo courts.

Nor

Nor has ſhe only this negative Diſcomfort, to be depriv'd of Pity, but ſhe is loaded with Cenſures and Reproach; the World is apt enough to run into malicious Errors, to fix Blame where there is none, but 'tis ſeldom guilty of the Charitable, does not overlook the ſmalleſt appearance of *Evil*, but generally puts the worſt Conſtruction upon any Act, that it will with any Probability bear; and according to that Meaſure *Women* in this Condition can expect no very mild Deſcants upon them; ſuch *Matches* are ſo deſtitute of any rational Plea, that 'tis hard to derive them from any other Motive than the Senſitive. What the common Conjectures are in that Caſe, is as needleſs as it is unhandſom to declare; I will not ſay how true they are, but if they be, it adds another Reaſon to the former, why ſuch Marriages are unproſperous. All Diſtortions in Nature are uſually Ominous, and ſure ſuch preter-natural Heats in Age, may very well be reckon'd as diſmal Preſages, and very certain ones too, ſince they create the Ruin they foretel: 'Tis not only juſt but convenient, that ſuch Motives ſhould be attended with ſuch Conſequences, that the bitterneſs of the one may occaſion ſome Reflexion on the Sordidneſs of the other; ſuch an autumnal Spring might be thought a kind of Miracle, if it did not meet with Froſts, and the unpleaſantneſs of the Event did not chaſtiſe the uglineſs of the Deſign. Wherefore, I think, thoſe that are conſcious of the one, ſhould be ſo far from murmuring, that they ſhould be very thankful for the other, think it God's Diſcipline to bring them again to their Wits, and not repine at that Smart which themſelves have made neceſſary.

It were to be wiſh'd that all the ancienter *Widows* wou'd ſeriouſly weigh how 'tis their Intereſt not to ſever thoſe two *Epithets*. That of *Ancient* they cannot put off, it daily grows upon them; and that of *Widow* is ſure a more proportionable *Adjunct* to it, than that of *Wife*, eſpecially when it is to one to whom her Age might have made her *Mother*. There is a Veneration

due

due to Age, if it be ſuch as diſowns not itſelf; *The Hoary Head is a Crown of Glory, if it be found in the way of Righteouſneſs*; but when it will mix itſelf with Youth, it is diſclaim'd by both, becomes the Shame of the old, and the Scorn of the *young*; what a ſtrange Fury is it then, which poſſeſſes ſuch *Women*, that when they may diſpoſe their *Fortunes* to thoſe advantageous Deſigns before-mention'd, they ſhould only buy with them ſo indecent, ſo ridiculous a Slavery; that when they may keep up the Reputation of Modeſty and Prudence, they ſhould expoſe themſelves to an univerſal Contempt for the want of both, and that they who might have had Reverence, ſhould put themſelves even out of the Capacity of a bare Compaſſion?

This is ſo high a Frenſy as ſure cannot happen in an Inſtant, it muſt have ſome preparatory Degrees, ſome rooting in the Conſtitution and Habit of the Mind, ſuch *Widows* have ſure ſome lightneſs of Humour, before they can be ſo giddy in their Brains, and therefore thoſe that will ſecure themſelves from the Effect, muſt ſubtract the Cauſe; if they will ſtill be wiſhing themſelves *young*, 'tis odds but in a while they will perſuade themſelves they are ſo; let them therefore content themſelves to be old, and as Faſhions are vary'd with Times, ſo let them put on the Ornaments proper to their Seaſon, which are *Piety*, *Gravity* and *Prudence*. Theſe will not only be their Ornament but their Armour too; theſe will gain them ſuch a Reverence, that will make it as improbable they ſhould be aſſaulted, as impoſſible they ſhould aſſault, for, I think, one may ſafely ſay, it is the want of one or all of theſe, which betrays *Women* to ſuch *Marriages*.

Indeed it may be a Matter of Caution even to the younger *Widows*, not to let themſelves too much looſe to a light frolick Humour, which perhaps they will not be able to put off, when it is moſt neceſſary they ſhould; it will not much invite a ſober Man to marry them while they are young, and if it continue with them till they are old, it may (as natural Motions uſe) grow more vio-

lent

lent towards its End, precipitate them into that ruinous Folly we have before conſider'd: Yet, ſhould they happen to eſcape that, ſhould it not force them from their Widowhood, it will ſure very ill agree with it. How prepoſterous is it for an *old Woman* to delight in Toys and Trifles, ſuch as were fitter to entertain her Grand-children? To read *Romances* with Spectacles, and be at Masks and Dancings, when ſhe is fit only to act the Antics? Theſe are Contradictions to Nature, the tearing off her Marks, and where ſhe writ *fifty* or *ſixty*, to leſſen beyond the Proportion of the unjuſt Steward, and write *ſixteen*; thoſe who thus manage their *Widowhood*, have more Reaſon to bewail it at laſt than at firſt, as having more experimentally found the Miſchief of being left to their own Guidance. It will therefore concern them all to put themſelves under a ſafer Conduct, by an aſſiduous Devotion to render themſelves up to the leading of the infallible Guide, who, if he be not a *Covering of the Eyes*, to preclude all ſecond Choices, may yet be a *Light to them*, for diſcerning who are fit to be choſen; that if they ſee fit to uſe their Liberty, and marry, they may yet take the Apoſtle's Reſtriction with it, that *it be only in the Lord*, upon ſuch ſober Motives, and with ſuch due Circumſtances, as may approve it to him.

'Twill not be improper to give ſome particular Rules to thoſe Ladies that are in the State of Widowhood, which will direct them to the Practice of the foregoing Conſiderations.

Let them reflect, that God has now reſtrained the former Licence, bound up their *Eyes*, and ſhut up their *Hearts* into a narrower Compaſs, having alſo given them *Sorrow* to be a Bridle to their Deſires; a *Widow* muſt be a *Mourner*, and ſhe that is not, cannot ſo well ſecure the Chaſtity of her proper State.

It is againſt publick Honeſty to marry another Man while ſhe is with Child by her former Husband; and of the ſame Fame it is, in a leſs Proportion, to marry within

within the Year of *Mourning*; it was anciently infamous for her to marry, till by common Account the Body was diſſolved into its firſt Principle of *Earth*.

A *Widow* muſt reſtrain her Memory and her Fancy, not recalling or recounting her former Permiſſions and freer Licences with any preſent Delight, for ſhe then opens that Sluice which her Husband's *Death* and her own Sorrow have ſhut up.

A *Widow*, who deſires that her *Widowhood* ſhould be a State pleaſing to God, muſt ſpend her Time as devout Virgins ſhould, in *Faſtings*, *Prayers* and *Charity*.

A Widow muſt forbid herſelf to uſe thoſe Temporal Solaces, which in her former Eſtate were innocent, but now are dangerous.

The *MISTRESS*.

LADIES are apt to think ſo little of any Obligation they are under, to have any guard upon themſelves with reſpect to their Carriage to their Servants, that it is very likely what we have to ſay on that Subject, may be reckon'd either Tedious or Impertinent: But, when they have ſeriouſly conſider'd what we ſhall offer to them, they will ſure not think it ſo light a matter, as it may at firſt Appearance ſeem to be.

The Inſpection of the Family falls uſually to the Care of the *Wife*, and tho' ſhe be not Supreme there, yet ſhe is to improve her delegated Power to the Advantage of all under it. The Apoſtle ſets it as the Calling and indiſpenſable *Duty* of the *Marry'd* Women, *That they guide the Houſe*; not thinking it a Point of Greatneſs to remit the Menage of all Domeſtick Concerns to a mercenary Houſekeeper. And indeed, ſince it has been a faſhionable

nable thing for the *Maſter* to reſign up his Concerns to the *Steward*; and the *Lady* hers to the *Governante*, it has gone ill with moſt great Families; while theſe Officers ſerve themſelves inſtead of thoſe that employ them, raiſe Fortunes on their Patrons Ruins, and divide the Spoil of the Family: The *Houſekeeper* pilfering within Doors, and the Bailiff plundering without.

Now to the well-guiding of the *Houſe* by the Miſtreſs of it, I know no better or more comprehenſive *Rule*, than for her to endeavour to make all that are hers to be God's *Servants* alſo. This will ſecure her of all thoſe intermediate Qualifications in them, in which her ſecular Intereſt is concern'd; their own Conſciences being the beſt Spy ſhe can ſet upon them, as to their Truth and Fidelity, and the beſt Spur alſo to Diligence and Induſtry. But to the making them ſuch, there will need *Inſtruction* and *Diſcipline*. It is a neceſſary Part of the *Rulers* Care to provide, that none in their Family ſhould want the requiſite Means of *Inſtruction*. I do not ſay that the Miſtreſs ſhould ſet up for a *Catechiſt* or *Preacher*, but that they take Order they ſhould be taught by thoſe that are qualify'd to teach them. And that their furniſhing them with Knowledge may not ſerve only to help them to a *great number of Stripes*, they are to give them the Opportunities of Conſecrating it by *Prayer* and *Devotion*; to that End to have publick Divine Offices in the Family, and that not by Starts or Accidents, when a *devouter* Gueſt is to be entertain'd, and laid by when a *profane*, but daily and regularly, that the Hours of Prayer may be fix'd and conſtant as thoſe of *Meals*, and, if it may poſſibly be, as much frequented. However, the *Miſtreſs* muſt give both her Precept and Example towards it.

A Chriſtian *Family* ſhould be the Epitome of a *Church*; but alas! how many among us lie under a perpetual Interdict, and yet not from the Uſurpation of any Foreign Power, but from the Irreligion of the Domeſtick? One may go into ſeveral great *Families*, and after ſome ſtay there,

there, not be able to ſay, that the *Name* of God was mention'd to any other Purpoſe than that of *Blaſphemy* and *Execration*; nor a Text of Scripture, unleſs in Burlesk and profane *Drollery*. We need not wonder then at the univerſal Complaint that is now made of *ill Servants*, when we reflect upon the ill Government of Families. They that are ſuffered wholly to forget their Duty towards *God*, will not always remember it towards *Man*. Servants are not ſuch Philoſophers, that upon the bare Strength of a few *Moral* Inſtincts they will be Virtuous; and if by a cuſtomary Neglect of all things ſacred, they are once taught to look at nothing beyond this World, they will often find Temptation enough here to diſcard their *Honeſty*, as the moſt unthriving Trade. And indeed, when the Awe of Religion is quite taken off from the *Vulgar*, there will ſcarce any Thing elſe be found to keep them within any tolerable Bounds; wherefore 'tis no leſs impolitick than profane to ſlacken the Rein.

It is not only the *Intereſt*, but the *Duty* of all that have *Families*, to keep up the Eſteem and Practice of Religion. 'Twas one of the great Endearments of *Abraham* to God, *That he would command his Houſhold to keep the way of the Lord.* And *Joſhua* undertakes no leſs for the Piety of his Houſhold, *As for me and my Houſe*, ſays he, *we will ſerve the Lord.* 'Tis ſure but reaſonable, that where we ourſelves owe an Homage, we ſhould make all our Dependents acknowledge the ſame. Beſides, it is Juſtice in reſpect of them; for where we entertain a *Servant*, we take the whole Perſon into our Care and Protection, and are falſe to that Undertaking, if we ſuffer his Soul, the moſt precious part of him, to periſh. God who keeps account even of his meaneſt Creatures, will not patiently reſent ſuch a Neglect of thoſe who bear his own Image, and were ranſom'd with as great a Price as their *Maſters* were; for with him there is no *Reſpect of Perſons*.

But

But when *Piety* is planted in a *Family*, it will ſoon wither if it be not kept in Vigour by *Diſcipline*. To have *Servants ſeemingly* devout in the *Oratory*, and yet really licentious out of it, is but to convert one's *Houſe* into a *Theatre*, make a *Play* of *Religion*, and keep a Set of *Actors* to perſonate and repreſent it.

'Tis neceſſary therefore to enquire how they behave themſelves when they are off the *Stage*, whether thoſe *Hands* which they lift up in *Prayer*, are at other Times induſtriouſly apply'd to *work*; or thoſe *Mouths* with which they bleſs God, are not elſewhere fill'd with Oaths and Curſes, Scurrilities and Revilings; in a word, whether the Form of Godlineſs be not deſign'd in Commutation for Sobriety and Honeſty. Indeed the *Governors* of *Families* ought to make a ſtrict Inſpection into the Manners of their *Servants*, and where they find them *Good*, to affix ſome ſpecial Mark of Favour, by which they may be encouraged to perſevere, and others invited to begin. But where they find them *Vicious*, there as eminently to diſcountenance, ſeverely to admoniſh them, and uſe all fit Means for their Reclaiming; and when that ſeems hopeleſs, to diſmiſs them, that they may not infect the reſt. *A little Leven leveneth the whole Lump*, and one *ill Servant* like a periſh'd Tooth, will be apt to corrupt his Fellows. Wherefore it is the ſame in *Families* that it is in more publick Communities, where *Severity* to the Ill, is *Mercy* and *Protection* to the reſt; and were Houſes thus weeded of all idle and vicious Perſons, they would not be ſo overgrown, nor degenerate into ſuch rude Wilderneſſes, as many, nay I fear moſt, great *Families* now are.

But as *Servants* are not to be tolerated in the Neglect of their Duty, ſo neither are they to be defeated of any of their Dues. *Maſters* are to give to their *Servants* that *which is juſt and equal*; and it is certainly but *juſt* and *equal*, that they who are rational Creatures, ſhould not be treated with the Rigour or Contempt of Brutes. A ſufficient and decent Proviſion, both in Sickneſs and

in

in Health, is a juſt Debt to them, beſides an exact Performance of thoſe particular Contracts upon which they were entertain'd. *Laban* had ſo much of natural Juſtice, that he would not take the Advantage of *Jacob*'s Relation to him, to make him ſerve him *gratis: Becauſe thou art my Brother, ſhouldſt thou therefore ſerve me for nought? tell me then what ſhall thy Wages be.* But alas! now-a-days where *Servants* have been hired, and expreſly articled with for their *Wages*, 'tis with many no eaſy Thing to get them. It is even thought by ſome *Maſters* an Inſolence, and a piece of Ill-manners, to demand them: And when they have worn out a *Servant*, they either pay him not at all, or with the Protraction and Regret which they do the Tailors for the old Clothes they have caſt off. There are, I fear, many Inſtances of this, eſpecially among great Perſons; it being a received *Mode* with too many of them, to pay no Debts to thoſe who are too mean to conteſt with them. But however they may ruffle it out with *Men*, it will one Day arraign them before *God*, as moſt injurious Oppreſſors; there being no Crime of that kind more frequently or ſeverely branded in Scripture, than this of the Detention of the Wages of the *Servant* and *Hireling*. Beſides, this Example of Injuſtice, in which the *Servant* is paſſive, is often tranſcrib'd by him in acts of Fraud and Deceit, and he is apt to think it but an equal Retaliation, to break his *Truſt* where the *Maſter* breaks his *Covenant*; and when he once attempts to be his own Paymaſter, 'tis not to be doubted but he will allow himſelf large Uſe for the Forbearance of his *Wages*. For which Reaſon the Courſe is no leſs Unprofitable to the *Maſter*, than Unjuſt and Diſhonourable.

It may not probably be always in the *Wife*'s Power to prevent this, or any of the former Faults in the Menage of the *Family*; for her Authority being but ſubordinate, if the Husband, who is Supreme, ſuſpend her Power, he does, by that vacating her Rule, take off the Duty conſequent to it: Wherefore what I have ſaid

can

can be obligatory to none who are ſo impeded; but to thoſe who can either do it themſelves, or perſuade their *Husbands* to it, the Omiſſion will be their *Sin*. All the Profaneneſs and Diſorder of the *Family* will be charg'd upon their Account, if it came by their Default.

And this, methinks, is a Conſideration that much mortifies one uſual piece of Vanity, I mean that of a multitude of *Servants*. We ſhall all of us find burden enough of our own perſonal Miſcarriages, and need not contrive to fetch in more weight from others. 'Tis generally obſerv'd in Families, that the bigger they are the worſe they are. *Vice* gains Boldneſs by Numbers, is hatch'd by the Warmth of a full Society, and we daily ſee People venture upon thoſe Enormities in Conſort and in a Crowd, which they would not dare, did they think they ſtood ſingle. Beſides, the wider the Province is, the more difficult it is well to adminiſter it, and in a heap of *Servants* many Faults will 'ſcape undiſcern'd, eſpecially conſidering the common Confederacy there is uſually among them, for the eluding of Diſcipline. What the wiſe Man therefore ſpeaks of not deſiring a Multitude of unprofitable *Children*, I think may be very well apply'd to Servants; whoſe Unprofitableneſs uſually increaſes together with their Number.

The Art of Governing of Servants is not ſo eaſy as it is neceſſary, and 'tis very well worth the Ladies Inquiry to inform themſelves how to diſcharge the Office of *Miſtreſs* as they ought. She ſhould underſtand to do every Thing properly, and in Seaſon. To employ her Servants with ſo much Eaſe and Order as may make their *Labour* pleaſant, and their Duty deſirable; above all, ſhe muſt be ſure to command that only which may and ought to be performed, otherwiſe it will be impoſſible to preſerve in them that Reſpect which is due to her Perſon. If ſhe be paſſionate, or too opinionated ſhe will dangerouſly expoſe herſelf upon every occaſion, will require Things Impracticable or Abſurd, and will never

be

be able to get the Good-will or Word of thoſe that are about her. If ſhe be humourſom towards them, or too flexible and given lightly to change what ſhe has once bid them do, her Authority will ſoon be at an End; ſhe will for certain make herſelf deſpis'd, and ſhe will deſerve it.

There is no ſmall Prudence requir'd in the *Government* of her *Servants:* She ought thoroughly to know them whom ſhe truſts about her; ſhe ſhould ſtudy to make herſelf both beloved and eſteemed by all all that ſerve her; ſhe ſhould give always exact Orders, that no Miſtake be committed; ſhe ſhould cauſe herſelf to be underſtood even with a Look, or with a Sign, ſo as others who are preſent may not take notice of it. I do not pretend to explain all that Miſtreſſes are to be inſtructed in, for the Government of their *Men* and *Maid-ſervants*; there will be ſeveral Inſtances particular to the Circumſtances of every Family, which it is impoſſible to bring into general Rules. But theſe Reflexions, and what will occaſionally be added hereafter, will go a good way towards ſetting them right in that part of their Conduct.

To this Government muſt be joined *Houſe-keeping*: Moſt part of the Women of Quality neglect it as a mean Employment, fit only for Peaſants or Farmers Wives, or at beſt for an *Houſekeeper*, or ſome *Woman* of *Buſineſs*; eſpecially the Women bred up in Softneſs, Abundance and Lazineſs, are unconcern'd at, and diſdainful of, all that falls under that Name; they put no great Difference between a Country working Life, and that of the wild *Indians* in *America*. If you ſpeak to them of the Price of Corn, of the Tilling of Lands, of the different Natures of Eſtates, of the raiſing of Rents, of the other Rights of Lordſhip, of the beſt manner of managing Farms, or of ſettling *Receivers*, they believe you intend to reduce them to *Employments* quite unworthy of them.

Yet it is only thro' mere Ignorance, that this Art of *Houſe-keeping* and governing of Families is deſpis'd: The old *Greeks* and *Romans*, who were ſo skilful and refin'd in

other Things, did yet inſtruct themſelves in this with great Care. The greateſt Men among them made, on their own Experiences in this Art, Books which are extant to this Day; in which they have not omitted to handle every Particular of *Agriculture.* It is known how their Conquerors diſdain'd not to Till the Ground, and even to return to the Plough, after their *Triumphs.* This is ſo different from our Manners at this Day, that it would not be believ'd, were there in *Hiſtory* but any Pretence to doubt it; yet, is it not more natural for People to endeavour to cultivate, than to enlarge their Country? To what ſerves *Victory*, unleſs to reap the Fruits of Peace?

After all, Solidity of Underſtanding conſiſts in endeavouring to be exactly inſtructed about the Manner with which thoſe Things are done, that are the Foundations of human Life. All the greateſt Affairs turn upon this, the Strength and Felicity of a State conſiſts not in having a great many Provinces if badly cultivated, but in drawing from the Land which is poſſeſs'd all that may be needful towards the eaſy Maintenance of a numerous People.

There is neceſſary, doubtleſs, a Genius much more elevated, and more extended, to be well inſtructed in all the Arts which have reſpect to Houſe-keeping, and to be in a Condition of ordering a whole Family, which is a little *Republick*, as it ought, than to be able to *Sing* or *Dance* to Admiration, or to play at *Cards* ever ſo well, or to diſcourſe ever ſo ſmartly on the Faſhions, or the Times, or to be Miſtreſs of all the little Graces of Converſation. 'Tis a very contemptible ſort of Temper, to aim at nothing beyond ſpeaking well. There are frequently ſeen *Women* who are notable Speakers, whoſe Converſation is even full of ſolid Maxims, and who only for want of having apply'd themſelves betimes to what's ſerious, have nothing but what is frivolous in their Behaviour. They can ſpeak admirably, but are vaſtly ſhort when they proceed to act. This is a Fault which muſt carefully be endeavour'd to be prevented, by uſing them betimes to

Buſi-

Buſineſs, and gently inſtructing them how and when they are to act upon every Occaſion that is preſented.

But heed muſt be taken too of the oppoſite Fault; *Women* run a risk of being extreme in every Thing; 'tis good to accuſtom them from their very *Childhood*, to have ſomething under their Government and Managery, to keep Accompts, to ſee the manner of the Market, as to every thing that is bought, and to underſtand how every thing belonging to a *Family* ſhould be made fit for uſe. But then you muſt alſo have a care that this incumber not their Minds too much, and that *Houſekeeping* in them turn not to *Avarice*. Shew them particularly therefore all the Ridiculouſneſs and Abſurdities of this Paſſion. Bid them beware of a Vice which gains but little, and diſhonours a great deal; tell them, a reaſonable Perſon ought not to ſeek any Thing in a frugal and laborious Life, but only to avoid the Scandal and Injuſtice of a Prodigal and Ruinous One; convince them that needleſs Expences are not to be retrenched, but with deſign to put them in a Condition of performing more liberally thoſe which either Decency, Friendſhip or Charity may require: Tell them further, 'tis alſo great Gain to know how to loſe when it is fit, and that it is good Order, not ſordid Sparing, which brings in the great Profits; fail not to repreſent to them the groſs miſtakes of ſuch Women who are intent upon ſaving an Inch of Candle, while they yet ſuffer themſelves to be cheated by a *Steward* in the main of their Eſtate.

Good *Houſewifery* and *Neatneſs* are by no means to be ſeparated. In breeding up Ladies, thoſe that have the Care of it muſt watch that they be Neat and Exact in every thing about them: They muſt accuſtom them not to ſuffer any Thing naſty or miſplac'd, but that they mark ſtrictly the leaſt Diſorder in an Houſe. They ſhould alſo be made to obſerve, that nothing contributes more to Houſewifery and Neatneſs, than to keep conſtantly every thing in its proper Place: This Rule appears as

nothing, yet it goes very far, if exactly kept. If you have need of any Thing, you loſe not a Minute's Time in ſeeking it. There is no Trouble, or Diſpute, or Confuſion, when you want it, you preſently lay your Hand upon it; and when you have done with it, you immediately put it again in its Place. Good Order is certainly one of the greateſt Parts of *Neatneſs*; nothing more pleaſes the Eyes than to ſee an exact Diſpoſition. Beſides, the Place which is given to each Thing, being that which moſt agrees to it, not only for Handſomneſs and Pleaſure of the Eyes, but alſo for its Preſervation; it is ſeldomer us'd than it would be otherwiſe, is not ſo ordinarily ſpoil'd by any Accident, and is more neatly kept. To theſe Advantages, add that alſo of taking, by this Habit, from Servants, Occaſions of Idleneſs and Confuſion, which are ſo pernicious to themſelves as well as to the Goods: And it is ſure more than a little Thing, thus both to render their Service quick and eaſy, and to take away from ourſelves the Temptation of growing frequently impatient at thoſe *Lets* which come from Things ſo miſplaced as to be hardly found.

But at the ſame Time let them be ſure to avoid the Exceſs of *Finery* and *Neatneſs:* Neatneſs, when it is moderated, is a Virtue, but when one follows in it too much ones own Humour, it is turn'd into Littleneſs of Spirit. A juſt Underſtanding always rejects exceſſive *Delicacy*; it treats little Matters as little, and is not at all hurt with them: Laugh therefore before *Children* at the little Baubles and Fooleries which ſo much bewitch ſome *Ladies*, and inſenſibly cauſe them ſo many uſeleſs Expences: Accuſtom them to plain and eaſy practicable Neatneſs, ſhew them the beſt way of making and doing Things, but ſhew them rather how to make ſhift without them. Tell them 'tis a Sign of a mean and low Genius, to be uneaſy for a Pottage not well-ſeaſon'd, for a Gown not ſo nicely plaited as it ſhould, for a Furbelce, for an Hood, or for a Chair not of the exacteſt Faſhion.

'Tis

'Tis doubtleſs the Token of a much better Temper, to be voluntarily and ſtudiouſly groſs, than to be delicate about Matters of ſo ſmall Importance. This Evil *Delicacy*, if not repreſt in *Women* who have *Wit*, is ſtill more dangerous in Company than all the reſt; almoſt all Perſons will be to them inſipid or troubleſom; the leaſt defect of Politeneſs appears to them a Monſter; they are always ſcornful and nauſeating. You muſt make them therefore underſtand betimes, that there is nothing ſo injudicious or abſurd, as to judge Superficially of a Perſon by his external Manners, inſtead of thoroughly examining his Soul, his Notions of Things, and his uſeful Qualifications. Make them ſee by ſeveral Inſtances, that a Countryman of a groſs, or, if you will have it, of a ridiculous Air, with his unſeaſonable and coarſe Compliments, if he has but a good honeſt Heart, and a regular Underſtanding, is more to be eſteem'd than a Courtier, who under the moſt accompliſh'd Politeneſs, hides an ungrateful, unjuſt and treacherous Heart, which is capable of all manner of Diſſimulations and Baſeneſſes: And that a plain Country Dame, that is without Guilt, how uncourtly ſoever, is more to be valu'd a thouſand Times, than the moſt nice Lady at Court, under whoſe Lips is the Poiſon of Deceit and Flattery; add, that there is always Weakneſs in the Perſons, who have a great Propenſion to Diſlike and Squeamiſhneſs.

I have already made ſome mention of what the Apoſtle tells us that *Maſters* owe their *Servants*, which Debt of theirs is ſo little regarded, that it is fit to preſs the Diſcharge of it a little more home. He bids *Maſters give unto their Servants that which is juſt and equal, knowing that they alſo have a Maſter in Heaven.* They are bidden here to give them that which is theirs by Contract and Agreement, that which is due in Law as being bargain'd for, upon ſuch and ſuch Terms: They are alſo here bidden to deal fairly, honeſtly, and kindly with them, to give them what is their Due, in Reaſon

Conſcience, tho' they have not formally contracted with them; to uſe them as well as other People, Merciful and Juſt, are ſuppoſed to uſe theirs, and as well as may be ſuppoſed the Servants would have agreed for had they ſuſpected otherwiſe. In a word, to look upon themſelves as much oblig'd in Conſcience and Reaſon, as they would be by Bond and ſolemn Contract.

'Tis plain, there may be a great deal of Difference between *Juſtice* and *Equity*, if Men ſo pleaſe; while they make their Contracts and Agreements by the Meaſure of *Juſtice*, and let *Reaſon* and *Conſcience* be the Rule of determining what is equal. In this Difference we may well conſider the Duty of *Maſters* as ſomewhat different, in being *juſt* and being *equal*.

They are commanded to be *Juſt*, to give their Servants what they have contracted for, whether it be Inſtruction, Wages, Maintenance, or Clothing; whatever is agreed for is in Juſtice due; and therefore whatever Information or Inſtruction is requiſite to qualify a *Servant* for the Calling and Profeſſion he pretends to, is to be given him as his Due, and cannot be juſtly withholden from him. 'Tis the End which *Servants* of that Sort propoſe and aim at, and the very Reaſon of putting themſelves in a State of *Servitude*; it is that for which eſpecially they contract, for which they give their Money, Time and Labour; wherefore it is a piece of great Injuſtice, to conceal the Skill that properly belongs to them, and is to make them Maſters of their *Calling*. They cannot anſwer to their Contract, without their letting their Servants into the full Knowledge of their Buſineſs, according to the Meaſure of their Underſtanding and Capacity. It is as much their Due as their daily Food, and detain'd with equal if not greater Injury.

A *Maſter* then is both Faithleſs and Unjuſt, that either thro' Deſign, Envy or Careleſſneſs, ſuffers his *Servant* to continue Ignorant and Unskilful in the way of his Profeſſion, which he agreed and covenanted to make

make him underſtand: He breaks his Covenant, and anſwers not his Truſt, by keeping back the Skill that is neceſſary to make his *Servant* what he aims at. The *Servant* is all the while deceived, and loſes the only Thing he bargain'd for, expected and deſir'd, and for which he pledged his Faith and Service. This is one way of refuſing to give to *Servants* that *which is Juſt*, and that a very great and miſchievous one.

Another is, of denying them their *Wages*, the withholding back the Price and Reward of their Service, that which they bargain'd and agreed for, which is as much the *Servant's* due, as any thing the *Maſter* has is his own. He has already paid for it, and to defraud him of it, is to rob him of juſt as much. 'Tis indeed in the Maſter's keeping, but it is no more his than any Stranger's. The *Maſter* ſold it for ſo much Time and Labour as the *Servant* and he agreed for, which being paid for by the *Servant's* Work, it is then his own. A *Maſter* may as well agree for Goods with any Cuſtomer, and receive the Price of them before-hand, and after that detain the Goods alſo, as take the Servant's Time and Labour firſt, and then deny him his appointed *Wages*. There is nothing plainer and better underſtood than the Reaſonableneſs and Juſtice of ſtanding to Agreements, ſuch eſpecially as were deliberately made, and which have been performed without Fraud on the one part; yet there is Reaſon to think this Part of Juſtice is very ill practis'd by many *Maſters* to their *Servants*, as if they did not owe the ſame to them as to their Betters. Some ſuch idle Fancy muſt poſſeſs them, that Superiors are not equally obliged by contracting with Inferiors, as they are with Equals: That which may make one eaſily conjecture thus, is, that the higher we go, the better Quality and Faſhion People are of, the more they are obſerv'd to offend againſt this Part of *Juſtice*, and the leſs Regard they have to the Diſcharge of what is due by *Contract* to their Servants. For this Reaſon, that which ſhould be to their Honour and Advantage, the

ſerving great People, turns to their great Loſs and Miſchief; they are thereby only more Injur'd and Oppreſs'd. For this additional Guilt, the Honour and great Quality of *Maſters* add to *Injuſtice*, that they make it alſo Oppreſſion; 'tis *Injuſtice* to deny what is the *Servants* Due, but when the *Servants* cannot by the legal common Courſes obtain that Due, thro' the great Power and Titles of their Maſters, then are they alſo oppreſs'd as well as wrong'd. It were ſome ſhame to ſay, that either Law or Cuſtom ſhould encourage or ſhould juſtify Oppreſſion, for *Juſtice* is to ſit the higheſt in the World.

It might contribute to the doing this ſort of *Juſtice*, to conſider, that they who are the backwardeſt to do it, are commonly the worſt ſerved; they are often met with, tho' in a very faulty Manner. For while the *Servants* live with them, they commonly live upon them; they find out ways to pay themſelves with Intereſt, but it is by *Frauds* and *Villanies*, by allowing great Rates to ſuch as deal with them, by being ill Husbands for them, by going Shares with thoſe that gain from them, and by a World of little Courſes that are falſe and wicked. One Injuſtice begets another; and tho' an unjuſt *Maſter* will not excuſe a falſe and wicked *Servant*, yet he oft occaſions it, by ſhewing him the Way, and putting him upon ſome kind of Neceſſity of living by ſuch Shifts. Wherefore the ſureſt way of being well ſerv'd, is to be very juſt, to ſtand exactly to Agreements, and to give them their own. This will make them diligent and faithful, and give them no Temptation to be otherwiſe; whereas, when that which of Right belongs to them is deny'd them, they firſt imagine they may do themſelves Juſtice, and then by Degrees they give themſelves great Reparations: Thus by being ill us'd they become wicked. Againſt this we have frequent Warnings in Scripture. *Thou ſhalt not oppreſs an hired Servant that is poor and needy, whether he be of thy Brethren, or of the Strangers that are in thy Land within thy Gates. At his Day thou ſhalt give him his Hire; neither ſhall the Sun go down upon*

upon it, for he is poor and ſetteth his Heart upon it, leſt he cry againſt thee to the Lord, and it be Sin unto thee. The Hardſhip is indeed the greater in detaining the Wages of poor Men, who daily ſubſiſt by their Labours; but the Injuſtice is the ſame whether you bargain by the Day or Year, in detaining their Hire from them. *Wo unto him that buildeth his Houſe by unrighteouſneſs, and his Chambers by Wrong, that uſeth his Neighbour's Service without Wages, and giveth him not for his Work.* Undoubtedly this Woe belongs to all that defraud their *Servants* of their Wages, for they are *Neighbours* in the Scripture Senſe of that Word, and they receive the Profit and Advantage of their Work and Service, and therefore ought to pay for the ſame. *Behold*, ſays St. *James*, *the hire of the Labourers, who have reaped down your Fields, which is of you kept back by Fraud, crieth, and their Cries have entered into the Ears of the Lord of Sabaoth.* The keeping back the Hire of *all other* Labourers, as well as *Reapers*, will cry unto the Lord, and enter into his Ears; the Cruelty and Injuſtice is all alike, and the Offence the ſame; wherefore they who make Conſcience of paying the *Day-Labourers*, ſhould alſo know they are obliged to deal as juſtly by their *menial Servants*, who alſo labour for them Day by Day. It is the ſame caſe with Food and Raiment, with any Profit or Convenience that the *Servant* has contracted for. It is in Juſtice due to him, and muſt not be withholden from him; when he has earn'd it, it is his, and his Inability of Recovering it by Right or Law, makes it not leſs due, than if he were actually poſſeſſed of it. The Injuſtice of detaining from Inferiors weak and helpleſs, is rais'd and aggravated by that Conſideration, becauſe there is Inſolence and Unmercifulneſs join'd with it. When they have nothing to oppoſe or anſwer to the Right and Juſtice of the Servants and Inferiors Claim, they have recourſe to Power and Might; they are Richer, Greater, and have more Friends and Intereſt, by whoſe help they trample over Juſtice. Nothing can betray a worſe Mind

than this, to oppreſs the weak and helpleſs, either becauſe they are ignorant of the Means of recovering their Dues, or unable to go through the Trouble, or bear the Charge of doing it. This is to take the Advantage of Mens Weakneſs which ought much rather to provoke their Pity and Compaſſion, and make them Friends and Patrons.

But Maſters are not only to deal *juſtly* by their *Servants*, they muſt alſo deal *Equally* by them, they muſt be *kind* as well as *honeſt* to them, they muſt give them what is their due in Reaſon and Conſcience, tho' they have not formally contracted for it. A Man may be as unjuſt in detaining that which the *Law* would not compel him to deliver, as that which it would force from him, and give to the Owner. 'Tis the Reaſon and Benefit of the *Contract* that make it at firſt binding, and obliges the Conſcience to make it good, before the Penalty of Laws come to be conſider'd. If one Man borrows Mony of another, he knows he is oblig'd in Conſcience to repay him, tho' he is not under formal Bonds to do it; the Benefit he receives he knows is Natural and Conditional, and requires the being anſwer'd in the like kind, which he on his Part promiſes, and the other expects; the Bond that afterwards ſucceeds, is to conſtrain him to do that Juſtice which his own Conſcience told him he muſt do without Conſtraint; it is therefore Evident, that where the Reaſon and Benefit of a *Contract* appear, there the Conſcience is equally oblig'd to ſtand to it, and make it good, as if it were never ſo formally made in Words and ty'd in Penalties; for though all *Contracts* naturally ſuppoſe mutual Promiſes and Engagements, yet the Bottom and Foundation of thoſe Promiſes, is the Senſe of ſome *Benefit* receiv'd, or the Hope and Preſumption of ſome *to be* receiv'd; wherefore that is the Obligation at the Bottom; thus there is a preſum'd Contract wherever the Beneficial Effects of one appear, tho' there be no formal one actually made; if then a *Maſter* receive the Advantage

of

of his *Servant*'s Time and Labour, he is oblig'd in Conſcience to make him a ſufficient Recompence, tho' there were no Bargain formally made between them; this the Conſcience ſays is *equal*, becauſe the Reaſon and Benefits of a *Contract* viſibly appear. This Rule is not only applicable to *Maſters* with regard to their *Servants*, but indeed to all Mankind with reſpect to one another. The Mind may be in Chains and Fetters, where the Body is not; the Conſcience often is oblig'd, where the Forms of *Juſtice* can take no hold of a Man; on which Account there are more Priſoners than we ſee or think of; many that walk at Liberty, and ſeem to be as free as the Air they breathe in, that yet know within themſelves, that they are truly *Priſoners* and due to *Juſtice*, tho' they elude it by ſome ſlight of Falſhood; they know they are oblig'd in Reaſon, Juſtice, and good Conſcience to diſcharge a great many Debts, which yet no Evidence, no Judge or Jury can extort from them. Their Credit, may be, was ſo great, that they have no Bond; their reputed Honeſty was ſuch, that Men were glad to deal with them upon their own Terms; or elſe they mortgag'd doubly, gave falſe Security, or ſo contriv'd their Obligations, that they ſhould be Inſignificant when try'd. The *Juſtice* of the *Law* purſues with Hatred and Abhorrence all theſe wicked Proceedings, but the Subtlety of knaviſh and deſigning People is too much for them, they triumph in her Weakneſs and their own Skill, and in Contempt of her walk in great Liberty; but 'tis the Liberty of *Body* only, for the *Mind* is all that while in Bonds, and knows its Obligations, knows what is truly *juſt* and *equal* with reſpect to Reaſon and Conſcience, however it eſcapes the Cognizance or Penalties of Laws.

But by *equal* is alſo to be underſtood ſuch Uſage and Treatment, as is fair, good-natur'd and human; to make their Lives as eaſy as we can, conſiſtently with the Performance of their Duty and our Buſineſs, and therefore not to purſue them with perpetual Contumely

and

and Reproach, nor uſe them as we do our Beaſts of Burden; it is one of the worſt ways in the World of ſhewing our Superiority, by giving ill Language, and Words that become no body to receive. The Condition of *Servitude* is of itſelf grievous enough, without the additional Evil of being on all Occaſions treated with Contempt and Scorn; if the Truth were known, the *Service* is not the better perform'd for ſuch perpetual Chidings and Upbraidings, eſpecially in ſo unſeemly a Manner. The nature of our Country is not ſo vile and diſingenuous, as always to want ſuch galling Spurs and ſharp Excitements, to the Performance of the *Servants* Duties. Good Words at leaſt ſhould be the firſt Experiment that all Superiors ſhould make, and be as long continu'd as they can, they are ſo handſom and becoming reaſonable and religious People; and to be ſure, thoſe *Servants* that perform their Duty, do it better with good Words, and live more Comfortably; and without doubt thoſe Means are fitteſt to be us'd, that beſt attain their End, with the Eaſe and Pleaſure of both *Parties*.

To this Comfort of *good Words* muſt be alſo added, *good Uſage*; *Maſters* muſt not be over rigorous in their Puniſhments, when Servants are faulty, but ſhould inflict them with Deliberation, good Intention, and Compaſſion. Anger produces often ſad Effects, even where it prompts the *Parents* to correct their *Children*, and therefore muſt be carefully attended to, where that Affection is not preſent to reſtrain them from exceeding the Bounds of Moderation. This is alſo to give them what is *equal*; the *Maſters* owe their *Servants* Admonition and Reproof, when they are found faulty, and Puniſhments proportioned to their Guilt. To this Moderation *Maſters* are alſo to have Regard in their Commands and Impoſitions, they muſt not oppreſs them with immoderate Tasks and Labour, but are to have a merciful Reſpect to the Capacity, Ability, and Strength of *Servants*. It was one occaſion of the Inſtitution of the *Sabbath* to the *Jews*, that Servants might be reliev'd,

and

and not conſume a miſerable Life, in conſtant and continual Labours.

It is true, that the *Servant's* Time and Labour are the *Maſter's*, and he is to give them to no ones Uſe beſides, but yet they are to be exacted with Equity and Reaſon; Men muſt not wear out the Heart, nor make all the waſte they can of Lands truly let out to them, though it be not expreſſy covenanted againſt; becauſe it is preſum'd in Reaſon and good Senſe, that others are to ſucceed in the Poſſeſſion of theſe Lands. A Servant is not to be ſo conſum'd with Toil, as to be made unfit for other or for farther *Services*; he is not preſum'd to conſent to ſuch a Bargain, tho' all his Time and Labour ſtill belong unto his *Maſter*. They are therefore very much to blame that have no Conſideration of their Servants, that never think they do enough, but are conſtantly charging them with new Tasks, without any Reſt or Intermiſſion. This is not dealing *equally* with them.

But farther, under this Head may well be comprehended all other Care, that is fit to be taken of them both in their Health and Sickneſs, the giving them good Advice, and ſetting them a good Example, affording them Opportunities of ſerving *God* both at home and abroad, the inſtructing them according to their Leiſure and Abilities in the common Rules of Honeſty and Juſtice, Truth and Faithfulneſs, exciting them to Diligence and Induſtry, and encouraging them therein, and in a word to make them Virtuous and Religious, that they may be as uſeful in the World as they can; and to ſee, in caſe of Sickneſs, that they want not what is fitting for their Condition: Theſe are Courſes that are likely to make good *Servants*, to encourage ſuch as are ſo, and to oblige them to ſerve their Maſters with the greateſt Care and Affection poſſible, there being none of ſo low and abject a Spirit, but who will ſtrive to make amends for kind good-natur'd Uſage.

We are next to conſider the Reaſon given by the Apoſtle why *Maſters* ſhould be *juſt* and *equal* to their *Servants*, which

which is becauſe they *know that they have alſo a Maſter in Heaven.* To make which Words a binding Reaſon to *Maſters*, they are to contain, either a Promiſe of Encouragement to ſuch as give their *Servants* that which is *juſt and equal*, or Threatning to ſuch as ſhall neglect the doing it; and conſidering who this *Maſter* is, the Lord *Chriſt*, he that ſhall judge the Quick and the Dead, with whom there is no reſpect of Perſons, who is to Puniſh and Reward, conſidering this, 'tis certain, that the Words intend them both, an Encouragement, to thoſe that ſhall comply with the Command, and Threatning to ſuch as ſhall neglect it. As they contain an Encouragement, they may be underſtood thus, *Maſters give to your Servants that which is juſt, knowing that ye have alſo a Maſter in Heaven*; one from whom you expect the juſt Performance of all thoſe great and precious Promiſes, which of his Grace and Goodneſs he has at any Time made you; and one from whom you look for all the Mercies and Benefits, both Temporal and Spiritual, that are either fit for him to give or for you to receive; and one who has promis'd to be a bounteous *Maſter* to all his faithful and obedient *Servants*, to ſhew Mercy to ſuch as ſhew Mercy to others. He took upon himſelf the Form of a *Servant*, and liv'd a mean humble Life, depending, for ought that appears, upon the Charity and Friendſhip of good People for his Subſiſtence, and on the Entertainments his Doctrine gain'd him; and therefore has exempted that, and every other poor and mean Condition, from Contumely and Reproach among *Chriſtians*, and made them rather for his ſake Objects of great Pity and Compaſſion; *Behold*, ſays our Saviour, *I am among you as he that ſerveth*; not only to give his Diſciples an Example of Humility and Condeſcenſion, now and then on juſt Occaſions, below their outward State and Quality, when it is to be ſerviceable to one another, but to ſanctify all Conditions of Life, and to ſhew the World that God looks not with Mens Eyes, that he rewards not Birth and Fortune, Quality and Title, but

that

that the meaneſt People in the World are acceptable with him, if they obey his Laws, and do his Will; that it is Goodneſs, Virtue, and Religion, which recommend to his Favour, and nothing elſe; which the Poor and *Servants* of this World are full as capable of, as the Rich and Mighty, and moſt honourable *Maſters*; and as he has made them Partakers of the ſame Grace here, and capable of the ſame Glory hereafter, ſo he commands them to be treated here with all the Mercy and Humanity, that their Condition is capable of receiving; upon this Principle no doubt, that all the World ſhould be as happy as they can; and this is that which every ſingle Perſon in the World ſhould govern himſelf by, to make each ſingle Creature as eaſy and as happy as he can in the Condition he is in; not to moleſt, afflict, or injure any one, but to all *Juſtice*, and to ſhew all *Mercy* we are able, conſiſtent with our own Benefit, and that of thoſe to whom we are more immediately related. Our *Maſter which is in Heaven* has by his Laws conſulted better the Eaſe and Benefit of all inferior Relations of Men, than either *Jewiſh*, *Greek*, or *Roman* Lawgivers have ever done. Their Condition is much more happy under *Chriſtianity*, than any other Diſpenſation.

The State of *Subjects* under their *Princes*, the Subjection of *Wives* to their *Husbands*, of *Servants* to their *Maſters*, is abundantly more eaſy by the Rules and Principles of that Religion, than to any People elſe. *Chriſtianity* has provided better for their Eaſe and Comfort, if thoſe that are concern'd will follow its Directions. *Chriſtianity* does not barely leave theſe Things to the Civil Laws and Cuſtoms of the Country, but it gives new Orders in their Favour; where Laws and Cuſtoms are unrighteous, cruel and unreaſonable againſt them, it mitigates them, and commands its Proſelytes to change them for good-natur'd, juſt and reaſonable ones; in a word, *Chriſtianity* is the beſt Religion that ever was for the good of Mankind. It beſt ſecures the Rights and Honours, Privileges and Advantages of all Superiors,

and

and beſt conſults the Eaſe and Happineſs of all Inferiors, by the moſt ſtrict and indiſpenſable Obligations it lays on all Men to be juſt and merciful, and to diſcharge their ſeveral Duties to each other, with the utmoſt Care and Faithfulneſs that can be; and this it does beyond all other Diſpenſations, by promiſes of Grace and Favour here, and mighty Recompences in the World to come, of which our Lord and Maſter is to be Judge and ſole Diſpenſer.

This End it alſo aims at and purſues, by the Threatnings of the greateſt Puniſhments to ſuch as ſhall neglect their ſeveral Duties. Do what becomes you to your *Servants*, give them that which is *juſt and equal*, remembring alſo that ye have a Maſter in Heaven, that commands you ſo to do, and who will alſo one Day take Account how ye have done it. With this your Maſter there is no reſpect of Perſons, the Bond and Free are all alike to him; the meaneſt *Servant* is as dear to him, as the moſt honourable *Maſter*; all ſhall be judged alike, and moſt impartially; the falſe and diſobedient *Servant* ſhall be puniſh'd, and ſo ſhall all unjuſt and cruel *Maſters*.

As this Deſign was form'd to lead People to *Piety*, more than to inſtruct them how to be *Polite*; ſo it has been all along executed with a principal View towards its End: However in forming the Mind, the Conduct of Ladies, with reſpect to things relating entirely to this World, is not to be omitted; Direction and Wiſdom in the Management of civil Affairs, having great Uſe in the Conduct alſo of Spiritual, I ſhall have regard to them in their Turns, and apply myſelf in the following Pages, particularly to *Ladies* as *Miſtreſſes* of Families.

They ſhould always remember that there are degrees of Care, to recommend themſelves to the World, in the ſeveral Parts of their Lives. In many things, tho' the doing them well may raiſe their *Credit* and *Eſteem*, yet the omiſſion of them would draw no immediate Reproach upon them; in others where their Duty more particularly calls them, the *Neglect* of them is among thoſe Faults which

which are not forgiven, and will bring them under a *Cenſure*, which will be much a heavier thing than the Trouble they would avoid. Of this kind is the *Government* of their *Houſe*, *Family*, and *Children*, which, ſince it is the Province allotted to their *Sex*, and that the diſcharging it well, will for that Reaſon be expected from them, if they either deſert it out of *Lazineſs*, or manage it ill for want of *Skill*, inſtead of *Helps*, they will be *Incumbrances* to the *Family* where they are placed.

They muſt be told, that no Reſpect is laſting, but that which is produced by our being in ſome Degree uſeful to thoſe that pay it; where that fails, the Homage and the Reverence go along with it, and fly to others, where ſomething may be expected in Exchange for them. Upon this Principle the Reſpects even of the *Children* and the *Servants*, will not ſtay with one that does not think them worth her Care. The bold *Houſe-keeper* ſhall make a better figure in the *Family*, than the *Lady* with all her fine Clothes, if ſhe wilfully relinquiſhes her Title to the Government; take heed therefore of carrying your good Breeding to ſuch a height, as to be good for nothing, and to be proud of it. Some think it has a great *Air* to be above troubling their Thoughts with ſuch ordinary Things as their Houſe and Family. Others dare not admit Cares, for fear they ſhould haſten *Wrinkles*. Miſtaken *Pride* makes ſome think they muſt keep themſelves up, and not deſcend to theſe Duties, which do not ſeem enough refin'd for great Ladies to be employ'd in; forgetting all this while that it is more than the greateſt *Princes* can do, at once to preſerve Reſpect, and to neglect their Buſineſs. No *Age* ever erected *Altars* to *Inſignificant Gods*, they had all ſome Quality apply'd to them, to draw Worſhip from Mankind. This makes it the more unreaſonable for a Lady to expect to be conſider'd, and at the ſame time reſolve not to deſerve it. *Good Looks* alone will not do, they are not ſuch a laſting *Tenure* as to be rely'd upon; and if they ſhould ſtay longer than they uſually do, it will by no means be ſafe

to

to depend upon them; for when Time has abated the Violence of the firſt liking, and that the *Nap* is a little worn off, tho' ſtill a good degree of Kindneſs may remain, *Men* recover their Sight which before might be dazled, and allow themſelves to object as well as to admire.

In ſuch a Caſe, when an *Husband* ſees an empty airy thing ſail up and down the Houſe to no kind of purpoſe, and look as if ſhe came thither only to make a *Viſit*; when he finds, that after her *Emptineſs* has been extreme buſy about ſome very ſenſeleſs thing, ſhe eats her *Breakfaſt* half an hour before *Dinner*, to be at greater Liberty to afflict the Company with her Diſcourſe; then calls for her Coach that ſhe may trouble her Acquaintance, who are already cloy'd with her, and having ſome *proper Dialogues* ready to diſplay her *fooliſh Eloquence* at the top of the Stairs, ſhe ſets out like a Ship out of the Harbour, laden with Trifles, and comes back freighted with Things of the ſame Inſignificancy: At her Return ſhe repeats to her faithful *Woman* the Triumphs of the Day's Impertinence; then wrapt up in Flattery and clean Linen, goes to Bed ſo ſatisfy'd, that it throws her into pleaſant Dreams of her own Felicity. Such a one is ſeldom ſerious but with her *Tailor*: Her *Children* and Family may now and then have a random Thought, but ſhe never takes Aim but at ſomething very Impertinent. I ſay, when a *Husband*, whoſe Province is without *Doors*, and to whom the Oeconomy of the Houſe would be in ſome Degree indecent, finds no *Order* nor *Quiet* in his *Family*, meets with *Complaints* of all kinds, ſpringing from this Root, the miſtaken *Lady*, who thinks to make amends for all this by having a well-choſen *Petticoat*, will at laſt be convinc'd of her *Error*, and with Grief be forc'd to undergo the Penalties that belong to thoſe that are wilfully *Inſignificant*. When this ſcurvy Hour comes upon her, ſhe firſt grows *Angry*; then when the Time of it is paſt, would perhaps grow *Wiſer*, not remembring that we can no more have *Wiſdom* than *Grace*, whenever we think

think fit to call for it; there are Times and Periods fix'd for both, and when they are too long neglected, the Puniſhment is that they are not attainable, and nothing remaining but an uſeleſs Grief for the *Folly* of having thrown them out of our Power.

You are to think what a mean Figure a *Woman* makes when ſhe is degraded by her own Fault; whereas there is nothing in thoſe *Duties* which are expected from her, that can be a leſſening to her, except her want of *Conduct* makes it ſo; ſhe may love her *Children* without living in the *Nurſery*, and may have a competent and diſcreet Care of them, without letting it break out upon the Company, or expoſing herſelf by turning her Diſcourſe that way, which is a kind of laying *Children* to the *Pariſh*, and it can hardly be ſo done, but that thoſe who hear it will think they are overcharg'd with them. A Woman's *Tenderneſs* to her *Children* is one of the leaſt deceitful Evidences of her Virtue; but yet the way of expreſſing it muſt be ſubject to the rules of *good Breeding*; and though a *Woman* of *Quality* ought not to be leſs kind to them, than Mothers of the meaneſt Rank are to theirs, yet ſhe may diſtinguiſh herſelf in the *Manner*, and avoid the coarſe Method, which in Women of a lower Size might be more excuſable. But ſo much has already been ſaid of the Duty incumbent on Mothers to educate their Children well, that 'twill be needleſs to enlarge upon it here; I ſhall therefore proceed to conſider what *Ladies*, as well as other *Miſtreſſes*, owe to their *Servants*. What Obligation they lie under to pay them ſtrictly what is their Due, has been ſhewn already, but they muſt never forget that 'tis a great Miſtake to think, becauſe they receive *Wages*, they are therefore ſo much inferior to them, that it is below their Care to know how to manage them; it would be a good Reaſon for a *Maſter Workman* to deſpiſe the *Wheels* of his *Engines*, becauſe they are made of *Wood*: Theſe, Ladies, are the *Wheels* of your *Family*, and let your Directions be never ſo faultleſs, yet if theſe *Engines* ſtop or move wrong, the whole Order of your Houſe is either at a ſtand or diſcompos'd;

pos'd; beſides, the *Inequality* which is between you, muſt not make you forget, that *Nature* makes no ſuch Diſtinction, but that *Servants* may be lookt upon as *humble Friends*, and that *Returns* of *Kindneſs* and *good Uſage* are as much due to ſuch of them as deſerve it, as their *Service* is due to you when you require it. *A fooliſh Haughtineſs* in the Stile of *ſpeaking*, or in the manner of *commanding* them, is in itſelf very indecent, and produces ill Conſequences, for it begets an *Averſion* in them, of which the leaſt ill Effect to be expected is, that they will be *ſlow* and *careleſs* in all that is enjoin'd them, and you will find it true by your Experience, that you will be ſo much the more *obey'd* as you are leſs *Imperious*. Be not too *haſty* in giving your Orders, nor too *angry* when they are not *obſerved* in every Point of them, much leſs ought you to be loud and too much diſturb'd. An evenneſs in diſtinguiſhing when they do well or ill, is that which will make your *Family* move by a *Rule* and without Noiſe, and will the better ſet out your Skill in conducting it with Eaſe and Silence, that it may be like a well-diſciplin'd Army, which knows how to anticipate the Orders that are fit to be given them. *Ladies* are never to forget the Duty of the *preſent Hour* to do another Thing, which, tho' it may be better in itſelf, is not to be unreaſonably preferr'd. Let them allot well-choſen Hours for the inſpection of their *Family*, which may be ſo diſtinguiſhed from the reſt of their Time, that the neceſſary Cares may come in their proper Place, without any Influence upon their good Humour or Interruption to other things; by theſe Methods they will put themſelves in Poſſeſſion of being valu'd by their *Servants*, and their *Obedience* will naturally follow.

I muſt not forget one of the greateſt *Articles* belonging to a *Family*, which is the *Expence*; it muſt not be ſuch as, by failing either in the Time or Meaſure of it, may rather draw *Cenſure* than gain *Applauſe*. If it were well examin'd, there is more Money given to be laugh'd at, than for any one thing in the World, though the Purchaſers do

not

not think ſo. A well-ſtated *Rule* is like the *Line*; when that is once paſt, we are under another *Pole*; ſo the firſt ſtraying from a Rule, is a ſtep towards making that which was before a Virtue, to change its Nature, and ſo grow either into a *Vice*, or at leaſt an *Impertinence*. The art of laying out Money wiſely is not attain'd to, without a great deal of Thought, and it is yet more difficult in the caſe of a *Wife*, who is accountable to her *Husband* for her Miſtakes in it; it is not only his *Money*, his *Credit* too is at Stake, if what lies under the *Wife*'s Care is manag'd either with indecent *Thrift* or too looſe *Profuſion*; the *Miſtreſs* of the *Family* therefore, and more eſpecially if ſhe be a *Wife*, is to keep the *Mean* between theſe two *Extremes*; and it being hardly poſſible to hold the Balance exactly even, let it rather incline toward the *Liberal* ſide, as more ſuitable to *Perſons* of *Quality*, and leſs ſubject to *Reproach*; of the two, a little *Money* miſ-ſpent is ſooner recover'd, than the Credit which is loſt by having it unhandſomly ſav'd; and a wiſe *Husband* will leſs forgive a ſhameful piece of Parſimony, than a little Extravagance if it be not too often repeated. His Mind in this muſt be the Wife's chief Direction; and his Temper, when once known, will in a great Meaſure juſtify her part in the Management, if he is pleaſed with it.

Theſe Rules will be thought a little too ſlaviſh for thoſe Ladies, that have ſet themſelves no other Guides than their own Wills, who claim an Independency in the Government of the Family, and will account for their Conduct neither to their Husbands nor the World; who in every thing conſult only their Fancy and Humour, and laugh at the Notion of *Duty* in the marry'd State, any farther than conſiſts with their Pleaſure and Eaſe; but we muſt beg leave to carry this Matter a little farther ſtill, and ſhew them that there is ſomething more than even all this expected from them, by the ſupreme Judge of all Things, to whom they muſt ſurely one Day account for the Neglect of all theſe Things; they muſt not only take care of family *Support* with Diſcretion, they muſt

alſo

alſo be as mindful of Family Religion, remembring that every one is accountable to God, not only for themſelves, but likewiſe thoſe that are committed to their Charge. It will be neceſſary to be a little particular in this Article, 'tis ſo little underſtood or practis'd.

Miſtreſſes of Families, where Maſters are wanting, either in Perſon or in Duty, ſhould ſee that the conſtant Worſhip of God be maintain'd in their *Families*, by daily *Prayers*, *Morning* and *Evening*, and by reading ſome Portions of the Holy Scriptures at thoſe Times, eſpecially out of the *Pſalms* and New *Teſtament*; this is of abſolute Neceſſity to keep alive a Senſe of God and Religion in their Minds; where it is neglected, how can any Family in Reaſon be reckon'd a *Family* of *Chriſtians*, or indeed to have any *Religion* at all?

There are not wanting excellent Helps to this Purpoſe, for thoſe that ſtand in need of them, as it is to be fear'd moſt *Families* do, for the due and decent Diſcharge of this ſolemn *Duty* of *Prayer*; theſe Helps may be found in ſeveral Books of *Devotion*, calculated for the private uſe of *Families*, as well as for *ſecret Prayers* in our *Cloſets*. For beſides the reading of the Holy Scriptures, which are the great Foundations of *Divine Truth*, *Maſters* and *Miſtreſſes* of *Families* may do well alſo to add to theſe, other pious and profitable *Books*, which by their Plainneſs are fitted for the inſtruction of all Capacities in the moſt neceſſary Points of *Belief* and *Practice*. There is, God be thanked, an abundant Store of this ſort, but none that is more fitted for general and conſtant Uſe, than that *excellent Book*, ſo well known by the *Title* of *The Whole Duty of Man*; becauſe it is conveniently divided into *Parts* or *Sections*, one of which may be read in the *Family* at any time, when there is Leiſure for it, but more eſpecially on the Lord's Day, when the whole Family may the more eaſily be brought and kept together, and have the Opportunity to attend upon theſe things without Diſtraction.

If the Reflections that have been collected in this Book, the *Ladies Library*, will prove of Uſe towards forwarding the

the Exerciſe of this important Duty, by putting People ſo often and ſo earneſtly in mind of it, it will abundantly recompenſe the Pains and Labour that hath been taken about it, and may be a Benefit as well as an Entertainment to Families, when read by Parcels at convenient Seaſons, and apply'd to proper Perſons. In the ſeveral Conditions of Life, we muſt by no means omit another part of *Family-Religion*, becauſe it is in many Families already gone, and in others going out of Faſhion; I mean, a ſolemn Acknowledgment of the Providence of *God*, by *begging* his *Bleſſing* at our *Meals*, upon his good Creatures provided for our Uſe, and by *returning Thanks* to him for the Benefit and Refreſhment of them; this being a piece of *Natural Religion*, own'd and practis'd in all Ages and in moſt Places of the World, but never ſo ſhamefully and ſcandalouſly neglected, and by many ſlighted and deſpis'd, as it is among us at this Day: And moſt of all neglected where there is the greateſt Reaſon for the doing it, at the moſt plentiful Tables, and among thoſe of higheſt Quality; as if great Perſons were aſhamed or thought ſcorn to own, from whence theſe Bleſſings come; like the Nation of the *Jews*, of whom God complains, *She knew not that I gave her Corn, and Wine, and Oil, and multiplied her Silver and Gold*; ſhe would not acknowledge from whoſe *Bounty* all theſe *Bleſſings* came; or as if the *Poor* were oblig'd to thank God for a little, but thoſe who are fed to the full, and whoſe Cups *overflow*, inſomuch that they are almoſt every Day ſurfeited of Plenty, were not at leaſt equally bound to make returns of thankful Acknowledgment to the *Great Giver* of all good Things, and implore his Bounty and Bleſſing, upon whom *the eyes of all do wait*, that *he may give them their Meat in due Seaſon*.

The neglecting this Duty is a very ſad and broad ſign of the Prevalency of *Atheiſm* and *Infidelity* among us, when ſo natural and ſo reaſonable a piece of *Religion*, ſo meet and equal an Acknowledgment of the conſtant and daily Care of the Providence of Almighty God towards

us,

us, begins to grow out of date and uſe, in a Nation profeſſing *Religion* and the Belief of the Being and Providence of God. Is it not a righteous Thing with God to take away his Bleſſings from Us, when we deny Him this juſt and eaſy Tribute of Praiſe and Thankſgiving? *Shall not God viſit for* this horrible *ingratitude, and ſhall not his Soul be avenged on ſuch a Nation as this? Hear O Heavens, and be horribly aſtoniſh'd at this!*

Another very conſiderable Part of *Family Religion* conſiſts in inſtructing thoſe committed to our Charge in the *Fundamental Principles*, and in the careful *Practice* of the *neceſſary Duties* of Religion. *Maſters* and *Miſtreſſes* of *Families* muſt have theſe things inſtilled into *Children* and *Servants*, by proper and ſuitable Means, by furniſhing them with thoſe Books that are moſt proper to teach them thoſe things in Religion, which are moſt neceſſary by all to be *believ'd* and *practis'd*.

In order to this, they muſt take care that they be taught to read, which will make the buſineſs of Inſtruction much eaſier. If they are diligent and well-diſpoſed, they may, after having been taught the *firſt Principles* of Religion, by reading the Holy *Scriptures* and other good Books, greatly improve themſelves, ſo as to be prepared to receive much greater Benefit and Advantage by the publick teaching of their Miniſters.

In this work of Inſtruction, our principal Care ſhould be, to plant thoſe *Principles* of *Religion* in our *Children* and *Servants*, which are moſt Fundamental and Neceſſary, and like to have the greateſt and moſt laſting Influence upon their whole Lives: As right and worthy Apprehenſions of God, eſpecially of his Infinite Goodneſs, and that he is of *purer Eyes than to behold Iniquity*; and a lively Senſe alſo of the great Evil and Danger of Sin; a firm Belief of the Immortality of our *Souls*, and of the unſpeakable and endleſs Rewards and Puniſhments of another World: If theſe *Principles* once take Root, they will ſpread ſtrangely, and probably ſtick by them all their Days.

Whereas

Whereas if we plant in them *doubtful Doctrines* and *Opinions*, and inculcate upon them the Notions of a Sect, and the Jargon of a Party, this will turn to a very pitiful Account, and we muſt expect that our *Harveſt* will be anſwerable to our *Husbandry*.

As this work of *Inſtruction* of thoſe that are under our Charge ought not to be neglected at other times, ſo it is more peculiarly ſeaſonable on the *Lord's Day*, which ought to be employ'd by us to religious Purpoſes, and in the exerciſes of Piety and Devotion. Chiefly in the *publick Worſhip* and Service of God, upon which we ſhould be careful that our *Children* and *Servants* diligently and devoutly attend, becauſe there God affords the Means which he has appointed for the begetting and increaſing of Piety and Goodneſs, and to which he has promiſed a more eſpecial Bleſſing. There they will have the opportunity of joining in the *publick Prayers* of God's Church, and of ſharing in the unſpeakable Benefit and Advantage of them. And there they will alſo have the Advantage of being inſtructed by the Miniſters of God in the Doctrine of Salvation, and the way to Eternal Life, and of being powerfully incited to the Practice of Piety and Virtue.

They will alſo there be invited to the *Lord's Table*, to participate of the Holy Sacrament of Chriſt's moſt bleſſed Body and Blood; which being the moſt ſolemn Inſtitution of the Chriſtian Religion, the frequent Participation of which is by our *Bleſſed Lord*, in remembrance of his dying Love, enjoin'd upon all *Chriſtians*, we ought to take a very particular care, that thoſe who are under our Charge, ſo ſoon as they are capable of it, be duly inſtructed and prepar'd for it; that ſo, as often as Opportunity offers, they may be preſent at this holy Action, and partake of the ineſtimable Benefits and Comforts of it.

When the *publick Worſhip* of *that Day* is over, our *Families* ſhould be inſtructed at *Home*, by having the *Scriptures* and other good *Books* read to them. Care alſo

ſhould be taken that they do this themſelves; it being the chief Opportunity that moſt of them, eſpecially *Servants*, have, of minding the buſineſs of Religion, and thinking ſeriouſly of another World.

And therefore one cannot but think it of very great Conſequence to the maintaining and keeping alive of Religion in the World, that this *Day* be religiouſly obſerved, and ſpent as much as may be in the Exerciſes of Piety, and in the Care of our Souls. For ſurely every one that has a true Senſe of Religion will grant, that it is neceſſary that ſome Time ſhould be ſolemnly ſet apart for this Purpoſe, which is of all other our greateſt Concernment: They who neglect this ſo proper Seaſon and Opportunity, will hardly find any other time for it, eſpecially thoſe who are under the Government and Command of others, as *Children* and *Servants*, who are ſeldom upon any other Day allow'd to be ſo much Maſters of their Time as upon this *Day*.

If *Maſters* and *Miſtreſſes* of *Families* are deſirous to have their *Children* and *Servants* religious in good earneſt, and would ſet them forward in the way to Heaven; they muſt not only allow them Time and Opportunity, but they muſt alſo earneſtly and ſtrictly charge them to retire themſelves every Day, and more eſpecially on the *Sabbath Day*, Morning and Evening, to pray to God for the forgiveneſs of their Sins, and for his Mercy and Bleſſing upon them; as alſo to praiſe him for all his Favours and Benefits conferr'd upon them from Day to Day.

In order to this, they ought to take care that their *Children* and *Servants* be furniſhed with ſuch ſhort *Forms* of *Prayers* and *Praiſe*, as are proper and ſuitable to their Capacities and Conditions reſpectively; becauſe there are but very few that know how to ſet about and perform theſe *Duties*, without ſome *Helps* of this kind.

Another principal part of the *Duty* of Maſters and Miſtreſſes of Families, conſiſts in giving *good Example*; which

which was *David's* Reſolution, *I will behave myſelf wiſely in a perfect way, I will walk within my Houſe with a perfect Heart.* They muſt be very careful to be *Exemplary* in their *Families* in the beſt Things; in a conſtant and devout ſerving of God, and in a ſober, and prudent, and unblameable Converſation.

One of the beſt and moſt effectual ways to make thoſe who are under our Care and Authority good, is to be good ourſelves, and by our good Example to ſhew them the way to be ſo: Without this, our beſt Inſtructions will ſignify but little, and the main Force and Efficacy of them will be loſt. We undermine the beſt Inſtructions we can give, when they are not ſeconded and confirmed by our own *Example* and *Practice:* The want of this will weaken the Authority of all our *good Counſel,* and very little *Reverence* and *Obedience* will be paid to it. The Precepts and Admonitions of a very good Man have in them a great Power of Perſuaſion, and are apt ſtrongly to move and to inflame others to *go and do likewiſe.* But the good Inſtructions of a bad Man are languid and faint, and of very little force; becauſe they give no Heart and Encouragement to follow that Counſel which they ſee he that gives it does not think fit to take himſelf.

The Obligation of the *Governors* of *Families,* to take care of their Conduct both in *Spirituals* and in *Temporals,* is not only their Duty but their Intereſt. All Authority over others is a Talent intruſted with us by God, and for which we are accountable, if we do not improve it and make uſe of it to that End. We are obliged by all lawful Means to provide for the *Temporal* Welfare of our *Family,* to feed and clothe their *Bodies,* and to give them a comfortable Subſiſtence here in the World. And ſurely much more are we obliged to take care of their *Souls,* and to conſult their *eternal* Happineſs in another Life; in compariſon of which all *temporal* Concernments and Conſiderations are as nothing.

It would be accounted a very barbarous thing in a *Father* or *Maſter* to ſuffer a *Child* to ſtarve for want of the *Neceſſaries* of Life, *Food* and *Raiment*; all the World would cry out ſhame upon them for it. But how much greater Cruelty muſt it in Reaſon be thought, to let an *Immortal* Soul, and one *for whom Chriſt died*, periſh for want of *Knowledge* and *neceſſary Inſtruction* for the attaining of eternal Salvation?

The Apoſtle thinks no Words bad enough for thoſe who neglect the *Temporal* Welfare of their *Families*; *he that provideth not for his own*, ſays he, *eſpecially for thoſe of his own Houſe, hath denied the Faith, and is worſe than an Infidel.* He does not deſerve the Name of a Chriſtian, who neglects a Duty, to which, from the plain Dictates of *Nature*, a *Heathen* thinks himſelf obliged. What then ſhall be ſaid for them who take no care to provide for the everlaſting Happineſs, and to prevent the eternal Miſery and Ruin of thoſe who are ſo immediately under their Charge, and ſo very nearly related to them?

We are obliged to procure the Happineſs of our *Children* and Servants, the one by the natural Bonds of *Duty* and *Affection*, the other by thoſe of common *Humanity*. This obliges us to be concern'd for the Happineſs of our *Servants* as they are *Men*, and of the ſame Nature with ourſelves; and *Charity* alſo, as they are *Chriſtians*, and *baptiz'd* into the ſame Faith, and capable of the ſame *Common Salvation*, does yet more ſtrictly oblige us by all means to endeavour that they may be made Partakers of it; eſpecially ſince they are committed to our Care, and we muſt for that Reaſon expect to be accountable to God for them.

Our *Obligation* therefore, in point of *Duty*, is very clear and ſtrong; and if we be remiſs and negligent in the Diſcharge of it, we can never anſwer it either to God or our own Conſciences, which ſhould awaken us all who are concern'd in it, to the ſerious conſideration of it, and

effectually

effectually engage us for the future to the faithful and conſcientious Performance of it.

Indeed *Intereſt* itſelf would oblige us to it, if there was no Conſideration of Duty to be a Spur to us in this Point. It is really for our Service and Advantage, that thoſe who belong to us ſhould ſerve and fear God; Religion being the beſt and ſureſt Foundation of the *Duties* of all Relations, and the beſt Caution and Security for the true Diſcharge and Performance of them.

Would we have Dutiful and Obedient *Children*, Diligent and Faithful Servants? Nothing will ſo effectually oblige them to be ſo, as the Fear of God and the Principles of Religion firmly ſettled and rooted in them. *Abraham*, who, by the Teſtimony of God himſelf, was ſo eminent an Example in this kind, both of a good *Father*, and a good *Maſter* of his Family, found the good Succeſs of his Religious Care in the happy Effects of it, both upon his Son *Iſaac*, and his chief Servant and Steward of his Houſe, *Eliezer* of *Damaſcus*.

What an unexampled Inſtance of the moſt profound Reſpect and Obedience to the Commands of his *Father* did *Iſaac* give, when without the leaſt Murmuring or Reluctancy he ſubmitted to be bound and laid upon the *Altar*, to have been ſlain for a *Sacrifice*, if God had not, by an *Angel* ſent on purpoſe, interpos'd to prevent it.

When an admirable Servant to *Abraham* was the *Steward* of his Houſe, *Eliezer* of *Damaſcus*, how Diligent and Faithful was he in his Maſter's Service? This made him truſt him with his greateſt Concernments, and with all that he had; and when he employ'd him in that great Affair of the *Marriage* of his Son *Iſaac*, what Pains did he take, what Prudence did he uſe, what Fidelity did he ſhew in the Diſcharge of that great Truſt, giving himſelf no Reſt, 'till he had accompliſh'd the Buſineſs he was ſent about? *God* ſeems purpoſely to have left theſe two Inſtances upon Record in *Scripture*, to encourage *Fathers* and *Maſters* of *Families* to Religious Care of their *Children* and *Servants*.

I will add but one Inſtance more to ſhew the Power of *Religion*, to oblige Men to their Duty. How did the Fear of God ſecure *Joſeph*'s Fidelity to his *Maſter* in the caſe of a very great and violent Temptation? When there was nothing elſe to reſtrain him from ſo lewd and wicked an Act to which he was ſo powerfully tempted, the Conſideration of the great Truſt his Maſter repos'd in him, and the Senſe of his Duty to him, but above all, the Fear of God preſerv'd him from conſenting to ſo vile and wicked an Action. *How can I*, ſays he, *do this great Wickedneſs, and ſin againſt God?*

In Prudence therefore, and from a wiſe Conſideration of the great Benefit and Advantage which will thereby redound to us, we ought with the greateſt care to inſtil the *Principles* of *Religion* into thoſe that belong to us: For if the *Seeds* of true *Piety* be *ſown* in them, we ſhall reap the Fruits of it: And if this be neglected, we ſhall certainly find the Miſchief and Inconvenience of it. If our *Children* and *Servants* be not taught to fear and reverence *God*, how can we expect that they ſhould reverence and regard us? At leaſt, we can have no ſure hold of them; for nothing but *Religion* lays an Obligation upon *Conſcience*, nor is there any other certain Bond of Duty, Obedience, and Fidelity. Men will break looſe from all other Ties, when a fit Occaſion and a fair Opportunity ſtrongly tempts them. And as *Religion* is neceſſary to procure the Favour of God, and all the Comfort and Happineſs which that brings along with it, ſo it is neceſſary alſo to ſecure the mutual *Duties* and *Offices* of Men to one another.

Having conſider'd the ſeveral Duties of the *Daughter*, *Wife*, *Mother*, *Widow*, *Miſtreſs*, in all their various Branches, we proceed now to the Conſideration of thoſe things which will moſt aſſiſt them in the good Diſcharge of them, as *Religion*, *Prayer*, *Repentance*, and the like. In the former part of this Deſign, we have had Regard to the *Reliſh* even of thoſe Worldly People who have

have no Taſte of Good, unleſs it be diſh'd to them in their own way, and has a mixture of the *Gay* as well as the *Serious*. We ſhall, in what follows, ſtudy chiefly to inſtruct and inform rather by Precepts, than Entertainment. The Subjects are the moſt uſeful that can be treated of; upon them depends our *eternal* Happineſs or Miſery, which is ſurely ſufficient to recommend them to the Study and Practice of *Chriſtians*.

THE INDEX.

A

Abraham's Truſt in God, *Page* 46.
Academies, in what the Education there is faulty, 220.
Addreſs of Lovers to be to Parents firſt, 34.
Adonijah ruin'd by his Father *David*'s Indulgence, 158.
Advice, excellent, the Church's in the Caſe of Matrimony, 36. Cautions for the Manner of giving it by Parents, 86. Of a Prelate to a Mother how to educate a Daughter, 111, *&ſeq.* of Maſters and Miſtreſſes, how neceſſary to their Servants, 266.
Adultery, the horrid Perjury of, 43. the Practice of the Ancient Chriſtians in that Caſe, 46.
Affectation to be avoided by Young and Old, 211. whence it ariſes, *ibid.*
Air (Open) Children ſhould be bred in it, 175.
Anger, many Provocations to it, 53. of Parents miſtaken by their Children, 87. to be corrected in Children, 148.
Avarice ſhould be no Motive of Marriage, 35.
Averſion, young Women ſhould ground it well in Caſe of Marriage, 35.

INDEX.

Auguſtus, his Moderation in eating, 179.
Aurelia, Mother of *Auguſtus*, his Tutor, 123, 130.
Auſtin, (St.) ſav'd by his Mother's Prayers, 168.
Authority of Parents, to be early exercis'd over their Children, 196.

B.

Banns of Marriage, why publiſhed, 12.
Baptiſm (Church) the Duty of Parents to give it their Children, 142.
Baths (Cold) the Virtue of 'em, 174.
Bed (hard) beſt for Children, 185.
Beer (ſmall) Drink for Children, 181.
Being of God, to be early taught Children, 143.
Body, good Temperature of it helps the Mind, 121.
Bread (brown) proper for Children, 178.
Breeding acquir'd by Converſation, 215.
Burial of Husbands, the Obligation of Widows to do it handſomly, 217.
Buſy-Bodies, Widows apt to be ſo, 226.

C.

Calling, all Children ſhould be bred up to one, 147.
Capacity of Children, how to know it, 210.
Careleſſneſs the Effect of bad Education, 94. When to be born with in Children, 214.
Carriage of Wives, Cautions about it, 43, 44. Civility of it comes with Age, 213.
Catechiſing Children, the Benefit of it, 158. A Pillar of the Proteſtant Religion, 160.
Charity, a Virtue to be taught Children betimes, 153. required of Widows, 224. The Bleſſings of it, 225.

Chaſte Converſation, the principal Duty of a Wife, 42.
Chaſtiſement, too much of it ſpoils Children, 198. and creates incurable Averſion, 200.
Cheats not ſo bad as Trickers, 110.
Child and Parent, the Relation equal among all Ranks, 129.
Childhood, what is underſtood by it, 138.
Children, the Duty they owe their Parents, 1, & *ſeq.* Cannot be acquitted of it by any Fault of their Parents, 6. How they ſhould be Corrected, 85. To be educated according to the Condition of their Parents, 91. Should be nurs'd by their Mothers, 117, 138. Muſt have nothing becauſe it pleaſes them, 194. Should look on their Parents as their beſt Friends, 197. Their Minds not to be too much curb'd, 199. Should be made ſenſible of Shame, 204. and converſe with their Parents, 216. Apt to be ſpoil'd by the Niggardlineſs of Mothers, 219.
Cholerick Husbands how to be manag'd, 77.
Chriſtnings, private ones condemn'd, 142.
Chriſtian Women muſt appear good, as well as be good, 43, 44.
Chriſtianity, the beſt Religion for all States of Life, 255.
Choice, Women ſeldom allow'd it in Marriage, 70.
Churliſh Husbands, how to be manag'd, 48.
Civility, inward, will produce outward, 215.
Cold Water, Childrens Feet to be waſh'd in it, 172.
Commands of Parents juſt and kind, 9. of Husbands when not to be obey'd, 41. of Parents ſhould be reaſonable, 104.
Compaſſion of Men how dangerous to Wives, 69.
Confirmation, the Practice of it recommended, 160.
Connivance at the Husband's Falſhood how far neceſſary in a Wife, 49.
Convent-Life no honourable Virginity, 25.

Corns cur'd by wet Feet, 173.
Correction, when to be us'd by Parents, 101. Rules for it, 156.
Covetous Husbands how to be manag'd, 78.
Country Gentlemen refus'd by Town Ladies, and why, 31. Should live at their Seats, 65.
Country, the Service we owe it, 95.
Craft not to be encourag'd in Women, 108. The ſign of a mean Spirit, 109.
Curioſity, the Miſchief of it to Virgins, 28.
Curſing of Parents, the Wickedneſs of it, 3.

D.

Dancing ſhould be taught Children, 213.
Darlings ruin'd by their Parents, 118.
Daughters, why they do not love their Mothers Company, 32. Advice to Mothers by a Prelate how to educate them, 111, *& ſeq.* Should be their Mothers Companions, 124, 125.
Debts to Servants, the Duty of paying them, 239, 247.
Decoy, Love ſo to young Women, 33.
Deformity of Drunkenneſs, 74.
Delicacy, not to be indulg'd in Children, 91.
Diet, great Moderation in it to be us'd towards Children, 150. Should be plain, 177. Rules for it, 178, *& ſeq.*
Dionyſius, his Saying to his Mother about a ſecond Marriage, 230.
Diligence, the Virtue of it in Children, 145, 146. Great Men famous for it, *ibid.*
Diſcipline, the Miſchief of ill timing it towards Children, 131,
Diſobedience of Children to Parents in the Caſe of Marriage, when juſtifiable, 16. the Trouble it occaſions, 22.

Diſſembling to be corrected in Children, 109.
Diſtinction of Quality abſolutely neceſſary, 90.
Divorces cheap among the Ancients, 16. The Practice of them among the Jews, 47.
Dominion of Parents to be ſubmitted to with Patience, 88.
Drink, much or ſtrong, not to be given to Children, 181.
Drunken Husbands, how their Wives ſhould treat them, 75. They give up the Privilege of Governing, 76.
Duties of Life, our firſt Conſideration in it, 84. of Wives, laugh'd at by Ladies, 261.

E.

Education to be ſuited to Condition, 91. Good, the Benefit of it, 97. Should be religious, 99, 100. Rules for Mothers towards their Daughters, 111, *& ſeq.* Errors of it mix with the Blood, 128. Should be religious, 143, 144.
Eli, his Sin of Indulgence to his Children, 156, 157, 158.
Employment, the Neceſſity of it for Virgins, 28. For People of Quality, 95.
Encouragements, what proper for Children, 202.
Eſteem of Husbands to be preferr'd by Wives, 67. of the World, Children ſhould be made in Love with it, 203.
Examples of Parents fatal to their Children, 103. Their Duty to give Good, 154. Of Maſters and Miſtreſſes of Families how prevalent, 266.
Extremes of Frugality or Expence to be avoided by Women in their Families, 260.

F.

Family, the Care of it is the Wife's Part, 235. Should be the Epitome of a Church, 236. Practice of Religion to be obſerved there, 237. The bigger the worſe, 240. Should be inſtructed in Religious Principles, 264.
Family Prayer, the Duty of it, 262. and of Family Religion, *ibid.*
Fancy in the Caſe of Marriage muſt yield to Obedience, 19. In Widows muſt be reſtrain'd, 235.
Father, when he forfeits his Right to Relief from his Son, 23.
Favorinus the Philoſopher, his Advice to Mothers to Nurſe their Children, 117.
Fear, Children not to be govern'd by it, 197.
Feet of Children to be waſh'd in cold Water, 172. Of *Chineſe* Women, how little, 177.
Fidelity, the Extent of this Duty towards Wives, 60.
Flattery of Servants ſpoils Children, 215. and their Preſents, 216.
Fondneſs of Parents ruins their Children, 118, 119.
Fooliſh Husband, when the Wife may have an Advantage by it, 80, 81.
Fortune, how careful the Wife ſhould be of the Huſband's, 63.
Friend, neceſſary Qualities of one for a Wife, 69.
Friends, (Husband's) how the Wife ſhould carry herſelf to them, 82.
Friendſhip, a Duty of Wives, as well as Love, 54.
Fruit, when hurtful to Children, 182. when not ſo, 183.
Fury of a Woman, Jealouſy ſuch, 58.

G.

Gaiety in old Women, what *Diogenes* ſaid of it, 230.
Gain (unlawful) bad proviſion for Children, 102.
Gaming, the Miſchief of it to Women, 28.
Gifts of Servants to Children not to be ſuffer'd, 216.
God, Knowledge of him to be taught Children, 143, 144.
Good Looks no Security for Love, 257.
Governeſſes, Children not to be truſted to them, 123.
Governors of Families, how they ſhould manage Servants, 238.
Gracchi, *Romans*, bred by their Mother *Cornelia*, 123, 130.
Grace, Servants as well Partakers of it as Maſters, 255.
Gratitude (common) obliges to love Parents, 2.

H.

Habits, ill ones to be corrected in Children, 190.
Happineſs or Miſery a Man's own making, 169. of Servants to be procur'd by Maſters, 268.
Hardſhips, Mind as well as Body to be inur'd to them, 189.
Hating of Children ſpoils them, 215.
Health of Children, how to be provided for, 170. General Rules for it, 188.
Heirs ſuffer by their Mothers Frugality, 219. injur'd by their Extravagance, 221.
Hierocles his Saying of the Honour we owe Parents, 23.
Hiſtory ſhould be ſtudy'd by Women, 108.
Home Education, the Diſadvantage of it, 220,
Honeſty, Children to be taught it early, 152.
Hours (late) hurtful to Health, 184.

Humour not to be indulg'd by Youth, 10. Not always ill in Husbands when ſour, 77. Rugged in Women to be corrected, 116.
Humouring Children ſpoils them, 195, 203.
Husbands, what Arts are us'd to ſet their Wives againſt them, 67. Not to be ſlighted publickly, if fooliſh, 81.

I.

Idleneſs begets Vice, 97, To be corrected betimes in Children, 124.
Jealouſy, the Danger and Miſchief of it, 56. How inconſiſtent with Modeſty, 74.
Jews, their ſevere Treatment of Women, 15. Their Kindneſs to their Parents in Diſtreſs, 23.
Imperiouſneſs in Wives, the Miſchief of it, 62. In Miſtreſſes, loſes the Love and Obedience of Servants, 260.
Impertinence of Servants not to be hearken'd to by new-marry'd Women, 82.
Indulgence of Parents the Ruin of Children, 118.
Infancy, ſeven Years of it the Life of an Animal, 121. Its Will pliant and manageable, 122.
Infirmities of Husbands, to be conceal'd by Wives, 63.
Iriſh, how hardy they breed their Children, 174.
Juſtification, the means of it to be us'd towards Jealous Husbands, 59.

L.

Labour, the great Fault of Parents in not putting their Children to it, 89.
Lacing ſtrait, the Miſchief of it to Women and Children, 176.
Latin, Mothers ſhould learn it to teach their Children, 136.

Laviſh Wives, their Sin, 66.
Lawgivers, Men are ſo to Women, 71.
Laws of Nations for the Right of Parents to diſpoſe of their Children in Marriage, 12, 14.
Learning, Children get an Averſion to it by the Peeviſhneſs of Tutors, 136. To be taught them by their Mothers, *ibid.*
Lenity of Parents to Children, Rules for it, 156.
Liberties (Innocent) when to be avoided by Diſcreet Wives, 59.
Library (Ladies) the Deſign of it, 262.
Life (Woman's) the moſt critical Part of it, 127. Firſt Ten Years of a Boy's to be well inſtructed, 129.
Lincoln (Counteſs of) her Book call'd the *Nurſery*, 117.
Living well, what is meant by it, 193.
Locke (Mr.) his Excellent Advice about Education, 132. 136.
Love, the beſt Quality in Marriage, 13.
Lungs, bad ones got by ſtrait Lacing, 177.
Lying, Children taught it, 192.

M.

Maids, old ones, their Impatience and Fault, 25, 26.
Malta (Inhabitants of) how they bear the Heat, 171.
Manners (Good) an exceſs of it, 71. Errors concerning it, 213.
Marriage, how far Parents Conſent is requir'd, 4, 11, 14, 15. never good without Love, 14. Chriſtian, the Reſtraint of it, 16. Children may have a ſecond without Parents Leave, 17. The Wife's an Adoption into the Husband's Family, 55. Its Inſtitution too ſacred to admit objecting to it, 72. The great hazard of it, 225. Should be of one Religion, 282.
Martyrs Book has preſerv'd the Proteſtant Religion, 160.

Maſters, their Duty to their Servants, 238, *& ſeq.*
Matches unequal, Widows caution'd againſt them, 227.
Matrimony, the Church's excellent Preface to it, 36.
Meals (Childrens) not to be at conſtant Hours, 180.
Mean Education, the Miſchief of it, 93,
Meat, Fleſh not to be given to Children, 178.
Meekneſs in Wives, the great Uſe of it, 49. The Grace and Merit, 52.
Melanthon, his Saying of three Difficult things, 137.
Memories of Children not to be overcharg'd, 208.
Milk (ſtrange) hurtful to Children, 139.
Mind, Proviſion to be made for it by Parents, as well as for the Body, 88. good Temperature of the Body helps it, 121.
Miſery or Happineſs, a Man's own making, 169.
Miſtreſs, the Rule for her in the governing her Servants, 236.
Modeſty, the great Virtue of it in Children, 145.
Monica, St. *Auſtin*'s Mother, ſav'd him by her Prayers, 168.
Mothers, the Duty of Children to them, 20. Advice to one by a Prelate how to educate a Daughter, 110, *& ſeq.* The Tenderneſs of the Title, 116. Should make their Daughters their Companions, 124.
Mourner, the true Character of a Widow, 234.

N.

Nakedneſs of Parents not to be expos'd, 1.
Nature has given the Superiority to the Man, and why, 39. Plain and rough, better than Affectation, 212.
Neglect of Parents in marrying their Children, excuſes their marrying themſelves, 18.
Niggardlineſs, the Vices of it, with reſpect to the Education of Children, 134.

Nouriſhment, how long Parents are to provide for it, 99.
Nuns, the beſt ſort of them, 25.
Nurſes, not to be truſted with the Education of Children, 132.
Nurſing of Children, the Duty of all Mothers, 117. Love to 'em loſt for want of it, *ibid.* 240. Not to do it an Affront to Nature, 138. It endears the Mother to the Child, 140. Trouble of it, no excuſe to forbear it, 141.

O.

Obedience, the Duty of it from Children to Parents, 3. The Practice of all Nations, 10. When not requir'd, 23.
Obligations of Maſters and Miſtreſſes of Families to take care of their Servants, 268, 269.
Old Age, qualifies for Counſel, 8. The Folly and Shame of waſting Time in Dreſſing, 30. and of Marriage, 231, 232. Slavery purchas'd by it, 233. The Folly of endeavouring to hide it, 234.
Orphans and Widows Objects of Pity, 221.

P.

Pampering Children, how hurtful to their Health, 193.
Parent, one muſt never be obey'd to the Prejudice of the other, 21.
Parent and Child, the Relation equal among all Ranks, 129.
Parents, the Duty of Children to relieve their Wants, 5, 23, *& ſeq.* Their Experience requires Obedience, 6. Their good Intentions to their Children, 7. Their Diſ-intereſt, 8. How they ſhould uſe their Power, 18. Are bound to diſpoſe of their Children in

in Marriage, 19. And will be glad to ſurrender their Daughters to a Rival Husband, 83. How they may make their Children Obedient, 84. Cruel ones but few, 87. Should be careful of their Childrens Education, 97. Covetous ruin their Children, 102. They love their Children better than their Children love them, 118.
Party Principles not to be taught Children, 163.
Paſſions, the Inequality of them, 79. Children ſhould be taught to govern them, 148.
Phyſick, the beſt for Children, 188.
Piety of Parents, a Bleſſing to their Children, 104. Early to be inſtilled into them, 126. Should be the Practice of Widows, 223.
Pity of Mothers to the Souls of their Children, a Duty, 135.
Play, how far Children ſhould be indulg'd in it, 208.
Plenty, the abuſe of it, 263.
Poor, the Bleſſing of their Prayers, 225.
Power of Husbands over Wives conſider'd, 40.
Practice, Virtue acquir'd by it, 166.
Praiſe of Men not to be valu'd againſt Virtue or Reaſon, 52. Children ſhould be made in Love with it, 207.
Prayer a Duty of Parents for their Children, 168.
Precepts have no Force from ill Men, 155.
Pride of Man humbled by his Defects, 75.
Principles, Parents ſhould take care to inſtil ſuch as are good into their Children, 162.
Proviſion to be made for Children, 98.
Provocations of Husbands do not juſtify Wives Anger, 54.

Q.

Quality (People of) moſt ſenſible of Jealouſy, 59. Cautions for their Educating their Children, 59.

Spoil'd by ſoft Education, 94. Cannot ſpend their Time better than in the Education of their Children, 130. Their Luxury, 193. Should mind the Government of their Families, 256. They loſe their Figure for want of it, 257. How they ſhould behave themſelves in it, 259.

R.

Reaſon, Dawnings of it ſeen in Infants, 122.
Red Poppy, the true Surfeit Water, 188.
Remains of Husbands of three Kinds, 217.
Reputation, how careful the Wife ſhould be of the Husband's, 63. A Love of it ſhould be taught Children, 204, 206.
Reſt, of Children, not to be diſturb'd, 184.
Reſty Children, not to be indulg'd in being ſo, 189.
Revenge ſometimes the Parent of Adultery, 57.
Rewards, ill ones for Children, 201.
Rod, the worſt way of Correction, 199.
Romances, the Miſchief of them to young Women, 28, 29.
Rules for Mothers to educate their Daughters by, 111, *& ſeq.* Children not to be taught by them, but by Practice, 209.

S.

Sabbath Day to be ſtrictly kept in Families, 265.
Sacrament, Servants to be invited to it, 265.
Sarah's Submiſſion to *Abraham*, 45.
Scotch Ladies, how hardy they breed their Children, 174.
Scriptures, Servants ſhould be made to read them, 264.
Separation (preſent) not juſtifiable in the Caſe of Adultery, 48.

Servants, their Intrigues corrupt Children, 124. Their Perverſeneſs ſpoils them, 205. Their Manners to be inſpected, 238.
Servitude, the Refuge of the Idle, 92.
Severity of Parents when neceſſary, 157. when hurtful, 200, 201.
Shapes of Women ſpoil'd by Lacing, 176.
Shameſacedneſs, the Virtue of it in Virgins, 27.
Silence to be taught Children, 149.
Sincerity ſhould be taught Children betimes, 147.
Sleep, Children to be indulg'd in it, 184.
Slow Children how to be manag'd, 167.
Sobriety, the Virtue of it in Youth, 150.
Softneſs, a great Fault in the Education of Ladies, 105.
Sons, when ſet free from the Guidance of Mothers, 21.
Speculation, how ſhort of Practice, 166.
Spirit, Meek and Quiet, the Duty of it in Wives, 44. Poor one got by the Severity of Parents, 201.
Strangeneſs of Men to their Wives, 60.
Strength, the Mark of Sovereignty, 38.
Strict Hand ſhould be kept over Children, 197.
Subjection, the Duty of a Wife, 37. The neceſſity of it in the State of Marriage, 38.
Sullenneſs in Husbands not always a Fault, 77.
Superſtition, Youth apt to be miſ-led by it, 151.
Surfeit Water, how to make it, 188.
Swimming, Children ſhould be taught it, 174.

T.

Tears coſt Women nothing, 107.
Tempers of Children to be conſulted in Education, 161. How to be mended when bad, 162.
Temptations made uſe of to corrupt Wives, 67.

Tenderneſs of Women to their Children, a ſign of their Virtue, 259.
Thrift, the Duty of it in a Wife, 64.
Time fitteſt for marrying, what the Philoſopher ſaid of it, 230.
Tobacco, its Uſe, 187.
Tongue, the Government of it to be taught Children, 149.
Town, the Forge of Vanity, 65.
Tricks baſe and miſchievous, 109.
Tutors for Children, good ones rarely met with, 133. Love rather to command than inſtruct, 208.
Tyranny of Men towards Women, 73.

V.

Vanity indulg'd in Children, 192.
Vice muſt not be ſuffer'd to take root in Children, 164. How they are inſenſibly taught it by Parents and Nurſes, 192.
Virginity, when Honourable, 24. Elements Eſſential to it, 27.
Virtue the only Ground for Partiality to Children, 119.
Viſits, when neceſſary and warrantable, 30.

W.

Warmly Clad, Children ſhould not be ſo, 170.
Wantonneſs, the fouleſt Blot in Women, 61.
Weak Husband, how to be manag'd, 80, 81.
Wealth, the Duty of Parents to diſtribute it among their Children, 102.
Weeping, how Women get a Cuſtom of it, 106.
Wet in the Feet healthy for Children, 172.

Widowhood, Duties of it, 217, *& ſeq.* To the Huſband's Memory, 218. His Reputation and Children, *ibid.* What makes it happy, 225.
Widows ſhould change their Conduct on the Death of their Husbands, 222. An Eccleſiaſtical Order of them, 224. Forward ones condemn'd, 227. Unpity'd when they marry ill, 231. Muſt forbid themſelves Temporal Solaces, 235.
Wife, the Qualities that ſhe ſhould not have, 31. Her Subjection to her Husband, 37. How ſhe ſhould behave herſelf towards him if falſe, 47, 48. Muſt forget the Indulgence of her Parents to her, 83.
Will, Subjection of it, what determines it in the State of Marriage, 41.
Wine not to be given to Children, 182.
Wit (True) in what it conſiſts, 106.
Wives inſignificant cannot keep Love, 258, 259.
Women, in what Reſtraint the Jews kept them, 15. Made for the Solace of Mankind, 40. Their Advantages, 71. More proper than Men for educating Children, 134.
Women (Young) by what Degrees enſnar'd, 33. Should direct their Lovers to their Parents, 34. Corrupted by Education not ſuitable to their Condition, 92.
Words, good ones, how neceſſary in Wives, 50. Soon diſtinguiſh'd from Actions by Children, 154.
Worſhip (publick) Children ſhould be made to frequent it, 165.
Wrath (Womens) pleaded to excuſe their Husband's Luſt, 57.

X.

Xenophon, a Story of his concerning young *Cyrus* and his Governor, 152. His Saying of the *Perſians* educating their Children, 167.

Y.

Years, Diſproportion of them in Marriage condemn'd, 229.
Young People ſhould be guided by their Parents Experience, 7. Spoil'd by Example, 128. Widows ſhould have a care of a light Humour, 223.
Youth, what is underſtood by it, 138.

Z.

Zeal, furious and boiſterous, ſpoils the Education of Children, 163.

The End of the Second Volume.



